

THE SILLIMAN FAMILY

Pennsylvania and South Carolina Lines

BY ROBERT B. SILLIMAN

Executive Vice President, Silliman University

DUMAGUETE CITY. PHILIPPINES



SILLIMAN UNIVERSITY PRESS
1966

Preface

The name SILLIMAN is believed to be of Anglo-Saxon origin. Lower's *Dictionary of Family Names of the United Kingdom*, published in London bears this out in the following statement (p. 315): "The Anglo-Saxon syl. or sul. a plow, is retained in the Wiltshire pronunciation *sylla*. Hence Silliman (or Sillyman) is probably ploughman."

Another writer, Bardsley, *Our English Surnames*, points out that the name Sillyman originally had a far different meaning than it would have today, since the word "silly" had a very different meaning than it has now. Bardsley points out that a "silly virgin" with Spenser was no foolish maiden, and the "silly" woman, in the language of Shakespeare, was merely an unprotected or innocent female. A further quotation by Bardsley is from Foxe's "Maryology" which describes the martyrdom of a seven-year-old child. "The Captain. . . committed the silly soul, this blessed babe, to prison." Bardsley concludes: "the name Sillyman or Silliman (as it is consistently spelled today) is but a pleasant memorial of the earlier usage of the word."

On the other hand it is possible that the name Silliman may be of Italian origin. This is given credence by a 1530 A.D. Silliman Family Coat of Arms shown in an old manuscript on heraldry of families (*Armorial Neuchatelois*, p. 213) in the Berne Public Library. A picture of this coat of arms is accompanied by the following description:

SILLIMAN, a family of Italian origin. . . coat of arms: blue with a chevron of silver, accompanied in the main field by a crescent shown overturned and two stars, all of gold; in the point below the chevron is a green tree planted on a mountain of the same field. In the crest of the head piece there is a star of gold, with a fleece of blue above the coat of arms.

The family seat in Switzerland was at Neufchatel, and as late as 1850 the protestant pastor of Neufchatel, in charge of the curacy of Cote aux-fies was Jules Francois Silliman.¹

¹ The writer has a picture of the Silliman Family Crest and also photostat copies of the 1850 correspondence between Benjamin and Jules Francois Silliman.

Professor Benjamin Silliman of Yale carried on an extensive correspondence with Jules Francois Silliman, and it was further learned that the family originally came from Lucca, but being protestants, they went to Geneva at the time of the Reformation. The original name was Sillimandi, later changed to Sillimand when Claud Sillimand became a citizen of Geneva in 1530 and finally it was changed to Silliman. Members of the family are known to have moved to Loraine and to Holland, and one member became a captain in the Austrian army. It is not unreasonable to speculate that some may have crossed the English channel and have later found their way to North Ireland, when King James I began his scheme of planting Ulster with Scotch and English protestants. They may have first intermarried with English families and still later with their Scotch-Irish neighbors, for the name Silliman is definitely not of Scottish extraction.

Even to this day the name is not a common family name, and yet there are over four hundred persons in the United States at the present time who proudly bear the Silliman name. Since early colonial days there have been many prominent Sillimans who have won distinction as soldiers, ministers, jurists, legislators, educators, and highly successful business men. Several have been noted philanthropists.

Sillimans have fought in every war from the American Revolution to World War II. Connecticut contributed to the Revolution: Brig. General Gold Selleck Silliman; Major-General William Silliman; Capt. Seth Silliman; Lt. Samuel Silliman; Lt. Seth Silliman; Captain Deodate Silliman; Quarter-master Jonathan Silliman, and at least one sailor under John Paul Jones, Samuel Silliman, Jr. Judge Ebenezer Silliman, father of Gold Selleck, was a member of the Committee of Correspondence.

The Pennsylvania line contributed a member of the Committee of Correspondence, Squire Thomas; his sons Alexander and James, as well as four other members of the family who are known to have fought in the Revolution. During the Civil

War General William Silliman Hillyer (the Grandfather of the poet Robert Silliman Hillyer-Pulitzer Prize winner and occupant of a Harvard chair) served General Grant as one of his chief staff officers.

The best known Silliman educator was Dr. Benjamin Silliman, Sr., appointed in 1802 as the first Professor of Chemistry and Natural History at Yale University. He was also a writer and the founder and first editor of the *American Journal of Science*. The present Silliman College at Yale University was named in his honor. In 1854 the father was succeeded by his son, Benjamin, Jr. Other educators include Dr. Justus Mitchell Silliman of Lafayette College; William Silliman, who in 1852 founded Silliman College, a Presbyterian school in Clinton, Louisiana; and Dr. Horace B. Silliman, who in 1900 gave the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions the money to establish Silliman Institute (now Silliman University) in the Philippines.

Ministers include the Reverend Robert Silliman, Yale graduate (1737) of Connecticut fame; the Rev. Jonathan Silliman, Yale (1817); Reverend Alexander Perry Silliman, Princeton graduate; Rev. George Dent Silliman; Rev. Cyrus Silliman; and the Rev. Vincent Brown Silliman. Several Sillimans have served as Presbyterian or Congregational missionaries. Candour J. Silliman, a graduate of Oglethorpe College in Georgia, was one of the earliest missionaries sent to work among the Choctaw Indians, serving until his death in 1856. Caroline Silliman, a descendant of Rev. Robert, was for many years a missionary educator in Turkey and later the Principal of a girls' school in Aleppo, Syria.

Well-known businessmen include the wealthy New York Wall Street banker, Augustus Ely Silliman and the four Silliman brothers—Thomas, James, Samuel and John, who were early pioneer settlers of Pottsville, Pa., all successful businessmen and coal-mine owners.

Jurists and legislators include Robert Silliman, representative for Fairfield, Connecticut (1722-28); Ebenezer Silliman, Speaker of the (Connecticut) House, 1773; Judge Wyllis Sil-

liman, the first Federal Judge of Ohio and a member of the Ohio Senate; Benjamin D. Silliman, prominent attorney and president of the N. Y. Bar Association; Judge Reuben Silliman, appointed by President McKinley as one of the first Circuit Court Judges in Hawaii—later became a prominent Wall Street lawyer; Judge Thomas Stephen Silliman of California; and James W. Silliman, former member and Speaker of the California Legislature from 1947 to 1955.

Countless others whose grandmother or great-grandmother was a Silliman have served their country equally well. In addition to the Hillyer family who have carried Silliman as their middle name, mention may be made of the Evans family of Tennessee—Silliman Evans, Sr., prominent newspaper editor and publisher of the *Nashville Tennessean* and his son, Silliman Evans Jr. Before Silliman Evans, Jr. died in 1961, it was the writer's privilege to tie up a broken line establishing his direct descent back to the original Connecticut Daniel Silliman.

My own interest in the Silliman Family history really began when I accepted an appointment from the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions to serve as a history instructor in Silliman Institute (now Silliman University).

Fortunately my travels to and from the Philippines and furloughs, on the average of one every four years, have enabled me to look up and visit Sillimans in many parts of the United States and even in India where I recently discovered an old Silliman family who have lived in Calcutta for three generations. On my first visit to San Francisco in 1926 I called at the office of a prominent Silliman, an attorney. All that we had in common was that we were both Presbyterians. During another furlough in 1937-38 I spent a year at Lafayette College and learned for the first time that there were many Silliman graves in and around Easton, Pa.

My next visit to the United States was in 1944, when my wife and I, having defied the Japanese for nearly three years, by refusing to surrender, hitch-hiked a ride to Australia in an American submarine. For two years, from August 1944 to

July 1946, we lived in New York City where my interest in locating new Sillimans in the Connecticut and New York areas was renewed.

Subsequent furloughs in 1950-51, 1955, 1959, and 1963 and a return trip by way of North Ireland made possible further research. In 1959 I obtained a mailing list of over three hundred Silliman names from a collection of telephone directories in the New York Public Library and then mailed to each a questionnaire with an appeal for all possible facts known to them about their own Silliman ancestors. The response was gratifying. Many of these persons have since sent me valuable records, old letters, newspaper clippings of death notices, and the like.

Furthermore I have spent many hours of research in public and private libraries in New York, Pittsburgh, Chicago, Los Angeles, and in the Library of Congress. I have visited a number of family graveyards in Connecticut and Pennsylvania, while other Sillimans in New York, Pennsylvania, and Ohio have kindly visited other cemeteries and copied for me numerous tombstone inscriptions. As a result I have been able to tie up a number of family lines of persons in New York, Kentucky, and California who knew that their grandfather or great grandfather originally came from Connecticut or Pennsylvania, or Ohio—while Sillimans still living in Connecticut or Pennsylvania had blank dead-end charts showing that certain numbers of their family had moved to some western state or far-away California and had never again, as far as they knew, been heard from.

In the meantime I have also had the satisfaction of discovering that my own great-grandfather purchased in 1827 a 90-acre farm in the heart of what is now a part of greater Pittsburgh, which he later sub-divided and sold as lots—the subdivision being known for a time as "Sillimanville." It was also a pleasure to discover that two of my great uncles—John and Robert—moved to Columbiana County, Ohio, where in 1851 they "laid out" what was to become the village of New Waterford (McCord's *History of Columbiana County*) and where they

were also largely instrumental in establishing the first Presbyterian Church in that area. Thus family research can be an interesting hobby—baffling and expensive; yet it can also be great fun.

It would seem that the Silliman family has ever been on the move. Therefore, it is not surprising that I should find my way to the Philippines—the farthest American frontier at that time—as did another Silliman before me, Col. William Calvin Silliman, who served as a young army lieutenant prior to World War I in the pacification of the *Moros* and in the bringing of law and order to the last outposts of Southern Mindanao. If I hadn't come to the Philippines, or if I had not returned here after my first term of service as I had originally planned, I would never have had the interest nor the opportunity to write this family history. Since my most original work and findings have been related to the Sillimans of Pennsylvania and South Carolina, this present volume will be limited to these lines. If time and the years should permit, I hope later to record the eventful story of the *Silliman Family—Connecticut Line*.

ROBERT B. SILLIMAN

Silliman University
Dumaguete, Philippines
Jan. 15, 1966.

Contents

Preface

v

PART I

THE PENNSYLVANIA LINE

I	North Ireland Roots	
	1. Sillimans Known to Have Lived in North Ireland	1
	2. Conditions in North Ireland That Led to the Scotch-Irish Migration to America	9
	3. The Establishment of New Homes in America	14
II	Thomas and Agnes	
	1. The Hunter Settlement	19
	2. Known Facts about Thomas and Agnes	21
	3. Alexander and Margaret	24
III	Squire Thomas and Sarah Nelson	
	1. Squire Thomas	29
	2. John	33
	3. Thomas Jr.	35
	4. Alexander and Janet Rea	36
IV	James and Susanah Hughes	
	1. New Homes in Berks County and Pottsville	39
	2. Thomas, Sarah Bowen, and Eliza Ridgway	43
	3. James Jr. and Mary Schotz	54
	A. Alexander	57
	B. Edward S.	57
	C. Morgan	59
	D. Amanda	60
	4. Samuel and Margaret Shelly	61
	5. John and Margaret Bobb	65
	A. Oscar H.	65
	B. Conard B.	66
	C. John H.	67

V	Samuel and Elizabeth	
1.	From the Forks of the Delaware to the Forks of the Ohio	71
2.	John and Nancy Stevenson	73
	A. Samuel P. Silliman	74
	B. William S. Silliman	74
3.	Robert and Mary Ann	75
4.	James P. and Mary L. Dunn	76
5.	Samuel Jr. and Rowena Roberts	77
	A. Frank Babb Silliman	78
	B. Robert H. Silliman	79
	(1) Robert B.	82
	(2) John R.	93
	(3) Frank P.	95
VI	Capt. Thomas and Mary Middaugh	
1.	Early Life and Settlement in the White Deer Valley	103
2.	Thomas and Mary Owen Snoddey	109
3.	Alexander and Jane Foresman	111
VII	James and Mary Hunter	
1.	Life in Northumberland and Erie Counties	114
2.	Thomas Silliman	119
3.	John Lawrence Silliman	120
VIII	Alexander and Mary Brown	
1.	New Frontiers	123
2.	Thomas and Mary Davidson	126
3.	Charles and Martha Davidson	135
4.	Alexander and Jane Davidson	136
5.	Isabella Silliman	138
IX	Thomas and Nancy Nelson	
1.	Known Facts about Thomas and Nancy	139
2.	Samuel and Lavina Lockhart	141
	A. Theanna Silliman	142
	B. James Silliman	142
	C. Nathaniel B. Silliman	146

PART II

THE SOUTH CAROLINA LINE

X	John Silliman	
	1. From Carncastle to South Carolina	151
	2. John Jr. and Mary Campbell Silliman	155
	A. Alexander Perry	156
	B. Thomas N.	156
	C. Ann Paulina	156
	D. William C.	157
	E. John M.	157
	F. James M.	158
	G. Samuel M.	159
	H. Calvin U.	161
	3. James and Mary McFadden Silliman	163
	A. William Albert	163
	(1) Alice Elizabeth	164
	(2) Mary Alberta	165
	(3) Louise Alexander	169
	B. Candour Jefferson	171
	C. Ralph McFadden	173
XI	Alexander Perry and Sarah Reid Silliman	
	1. A "Consecrated Life"	175
	2. John Reid	182
	3. Sarah Frances	184
	4. Gertrude	186
	5. James Milton	192
XII	William Calvin Silliman	
	1. William Calvin	194
	2. William Calvin, Jr.	196
	Acknowledgments	205

PART I

THE PENNSYLVANIA LINE

THE SILLIMAN FAMILY PENNSYLVANIA AND CAROLINA LINES

CHAPTER I

NORTH IRELAND ROOTS

1. Sillimans Known to Have Lived in North Ireland

Records obtained from the Ulster-Scot Historical Society of Belfast, North Ireland, reveal that as early as 1669 there were two families by the name of Silliman living in Antrim County, North Ireland.

The Hearthmoney Rolls of 1669 show that a widow Silleyman of Island Magee and a John Silleman of Aghalee Parish paid Hearthmoney taxes for that year. This tax was payable on each hearth or fireplace. The 1669 List, which the writer had the privilege of examining in Belfast in June 1964, was made up principally of the original settlers or sons of original settlers from Scotland. It is a known fact that most of the settlers in County Antrim migrated from Scotland. Listed in the same Island Magee area with the widow Silleyman were Robert, John, and James Boyd, James Nelson, John Miller, Robert and William Wilson. Neighbors of John Silleman were George Scott and John Wilson. Others known to have lived in North Ireland were the Brown, McCrea, Rea and McFarren families. These same names appear sixty years later in the records of the first Scotch-Irish settlers who comprised the 1728 Hunter Settlement near Easton, Pa. In 1774 John McFarren was appointed an executor of the Last Will and Testament of Agnes Silliman and his wife, Mary, served as a witness. In 1776-78 Thomas and Alexander Sillyman, Charles and William Brown served as Revolutionary soldiers under Capt. John Nelson. A Joseph Miller served as an officer under Capt. Thomas Sillyman. In 1780 John and James Sillyman were together in the same company under Capt. Campbell with John and Alexander Brown. Thus the similarity of names on the official 1669 Hearthmoney Rolls for County Antrim (especially the Island Magee area), the lists of the first Scotch-Irish settlers

near Easton, Pa. and the Revolutionary War lists of soldiers from Northampton County is truly impressive.

In 1719 and 1720 John Sillyman of Aghalee Parish, Antrim County, is named in a rental of the Hartford Estate. This reference is of particular interest because it is the first known spelling of the name as Sillyman. It is also of interest because this John Sillyman was in all probability a relative of Thomas Sillyman, born in Antrim County, North Ireland, who arrived in Pennsylvania in 1728 as a member of the Scotch-Irish Hunter Colony which settled in what was then Bucks County at the Forks of the Delaware River near Easton, Pennsylvania, and later known as Mount Bethel Township. The leader of the colony was Alexander Hunter, a Presbyterian elder and preacher.

Another Antrim County Record of interest is that of a recorded will (original lost in the Dublin fire of 1922 but fortunately an extract made prior to 1922 has been preserved) proved on February 22, 1725, of Robert Silliman of Glynn, North Ireland, listing his wife Shusan, and children; John, Margaret, Elizabeth, Jean, Shusan, Isabel, Robert. This is the earliest known North Ireland spelling of the name as Silliman. Thus by 1725 there were both Sillymans and Sillimans living in North Ireland as there were to be shortly in Pennsylvania and New Jersey.

Until recently no one had been able to identify a John Silliman who was known to have lived prior to 1755 in Freehold, Monmouth County, New Jersey. It was surmised that he belonged to the Silliman family of Connecticut because of the difference in the spelling of his name, since the Connecticut Sillimans have consistently spelled their name Silliman from the days of the original Daniel Silliman, who settled in Connecticut shortly before 1660.

The will of this New Jersey John Silliman, proved on June 2, 1755, named as his heirs his stepmother Susna; sisters: Jean Blayer, Isabel Clark, Elizabeth Gibson, Margaret McFarrer, and Susnah Lair.

From a comparison of the two wills that of his father Ro-

bert in North Ireland and his own—it may now be inferred that sometime shortly after 1725 during a general exodus of the period, John Silliman had sufficient money to pay the passage of the entire family, with the exception of his brother Robert, to America and that he continued to provide for and look after the family even to the extent of seeing all his sisters married into good Scotch-Irish families. One cannot but regret that nothing further is known of what happened to his brother Robert. He may have continued to live in North Ireland as did other Sillimans and Sillymans. Unfortunately few early North Ireland records have been preserved or are available. The Presbyterian Church registers for the Larne and Island Magee area did not commence until 1826. Many records that did exist at one time were destroyed on account of turmoil and strife at various periods. Ironically one of the greatest losses was the destruction during the Civil War in Ireland in 1922 of all the wills and other records lodged in the Public Record office in Dublin.

Fortunately in addition to the few earlier records a Lands Index, Registry of Deeds, 1708-1838 for Antrim County has been preserved, as well as a Will Index and other records showing that the following Sillimans or Sillymans lived or died in Antrim County prior to 1830:

1669 Widow Silleyman (Dundressen, Island Magee)

1669 Hearthmoney Rolls Tax

1669 John Silleman (Aghalee town, Aghalee Parish)

1669 Hearthmoney Rolls Tax

(Note: It is possible that the Daniel Silliman who settled in Conn. and who married Peaceable Eggleton in 1661 could have been a son of the above John or Widow Silleyman, despite the (unproved) claim of some of his descendants that he was of Italian or perhaps Dutch descent.

1719 John Sillyman (Aghalee)

1720 John Sillyman (Ballynaghten, Aghalee Parish Land Rental Records, Belfast)

- 1725 Robert Silliman (Glynn, Glynn Parish)
 Will made 3/14/1724—proved 2/22/1725
 Wife Shusan: children; John, Margaret, Elizabeth, Jean, Shusan, Isabel, Robert.
- 1755 John Silliman (Templecorran)
 Jan. 22, 1755, Indenture of Lease between Archibald Edmonstone of Red Hall and John *Sillyman* of Templecorran for 68 acres of land in Templecorran, formerly possessed by John Clark. Signature and seal, John Silliman.
- 1764 Thomas Sillyman (Templecorran) will proved
- 1774 John Silliman (Templecorran Parish)
 Oct. 29, 1774 Recorded mortgage of 68 acres—between John Silliman farmer and John Clarke, whereby the said John Silliman in consideration of 56 pounds, 17 shillings paid by the said John Clarke did grant—sell and transfer to John Clarke all that parcel of land formerly possessed by John Clark. Signature and seal John Silliman. (Witness) David Henderson
- 1775 W. Sylliman (Carnmoney Parish)
 Signed petition of Protestant Dissenters
- 1776 Thomas Sillyman (Ballygilbert, Carncastle Parish)
 Freeholder, Antrim Co. List of Voters
- 1776 James Sillyman (Locktown, Templecorran Parish)
 Freeholder, Antrim Co. List of Voters
- 1777 John Sileman (Red Hall—Templecorran Parish)
 Rental lists
- 1777 Alexander Sileman—Templecorran Parish)
- 1777 James Sileman—Templecorran Parish)
- 1782 John Sillyman (Ardboe, Tyron Co.)
 Aug. 25th—"John, son of John and Anne Sillyman bapt."
- 1783 John Sillyman (Ballycarry Graveyard—Templecorran)
 "Here lyes the remains of John Sillyman who departed this life May 1st, 1783 aged 73 years."

1784 John Silliman (Broad Island) Will Proved

1799 James Sillyman (Templecorran) Will Proved

1803 John Sillyman (Island Magee)

Indentures of Deed of Release, May 4, 1803, between John Sillyman of Island Magee and John McCrea—whereby the said John Sillyman in consideration of 400 pounds did grant and convey unto the said John McCrea. . . lands in Templeffin and Castle (town).

Sworn at Belfast 1 October 1804

1818 Alexander Silliman (Broad Island) Will Proved

1828 Alexander Silliman (Broad Island)

Named as Executor in Will of Nathaniel Pinkerton of Broad Island, July 26, 1828

1830 Eliza Silliman, Ballyrickard More, 11 acres

1830 Thomas Silliman, Ballyrickard More, 30 acres Tithe Book, Raloo Parish

It is interesting to note that nearly all of the above Sillimans or Sillymans lived in Antrim County within a very short distance of each other. Island Magee, just east and parallel of Larne-Glynn and Templecorran, is actually not an island, but a peninsula approximately seven miles long and varying in width from one to two miles.

Dixon Donaldson, in his *History of Islandmagee*, states that "this area, even to this day (1927) is noted for its excellent soil, springs and high state of cultivation, also for its weaving and fishing. The early inhabitants were all of Scottish descent and still remain thoroughly Scotch in dialect, manners and customs." He further states that they were remarkably intelligent and that out of a population of nearly three thousand (2610 inhabitants in 1833) no living person can recollect an instance of a native being imprisoned for or convicted of any criminal offense, the tenantry being of one class—no gentry holding any of the land or residing in the place.

The distance from Carncastle (where John Silliman, the founder of the South Carolina branch of the Silliman family, was born in 1747 and is known to have resided before emigrating to America) to the Templecorran (Broadisland area)

is less than ten miles. The distance from Larne to across the narrow entrance of Larne-Lough and beyond Browns Bay, Dundressan and to Portmuck Bay on the eastern coast of Island Magee, is less than three and one half miles. Thus within a radius of five miles from Larne a dozen or more different Sillimans are known to have lived or died between the year 1669 and 1830, and during the years between 1728 and 1774 five different Silliman families from Antrim Co. established homes in the New World: Thomas Sillyman in Penna.; John Silliman (son of Robert) in New Jersey; Alexander Silliman in New Jersey; John Silliman in North Carolina; and John Silliman in South Carolina; and without exception all of these were staunch Presbyterians, as are most of their descendants today.

This is no mere coincidence. Church records show that the first official Presbyterian Church in North Ireland was established in this same small area between Larne and the sea port of Carruckfugus, just south of Templecorran. To assist in the suppression of a rebellion that had broken out in Ulster, Scottish soldiers under Major-General Munro landed at Carruckfugus in April, 1642. Many were quartered over the county, the men of Lord Lindsay being quartered in Broadisland and the Island Magee. Being from Scotland many were, of course, Presbyterians—and a temporary cessation of hostilities gave an opportunity for the chaplains and elders of the Scottish Army to think of forming a Presbytery of the Church of Scotland. The older Scot colonists welcomed the idea and gave their support. The 1st Presbyterian Church in North Ireland was then founded in 1642 and the first Presbyterian minister, the Rev. Henry Maine, assumed his pastorate on the Islandmagee in 1647.

It is also interesting to note that there were almost as many Sillimans as Sillymans living in Antrim County prior to 1830. The name also seems to have been used interchangeably. In the above listed lease of land to John Silliman in January, 1755, the name of John appears twice as John Sillyman, but the lease itself is clearly signed and sealed "John Silliman."

When this same land (68 acres) was leased to John Clarke in 1774, the name is consistently spelled as Silliman. In this

same connection an interesting inconsistency appears in the Will of Agnes Sillyman, the wife of Thomas Sillyman, the founder of the Pennsylvania line.

This Will, of which the writer has a photostat copy, drawn up on April 25, 1774, starts with the statement "I, Agnes Siliman of the Forks Township County of Northampton..." and then specifically mentions "my Grand Daughter Agnes Silliman ... my three grandsons viz: Thomas, Alexander & John Silliman." The will is signed "Agnes A. *Silliman*" with her mark below. Whoever wrote this will in excellent penmanship, was consistent in the spelling of the name. However, two years later when the Will was proved (on Feb. 20, 1788) in Northampton County, it is recorded as the "Last Will and Testament of Agnes Sillyman Deceased" and then three lines below the witnesses are spoken of as having declared that they "did see the Testator Inscribe her mark thereto Expressed to be the mark of Agnes Silliman." The descendants of Thomas and Agnes for some strange reason consistently retained the name Sillyman, as letters, wills, deeds, and war records will show, for another decade after the American Revolution. The 1790 Census lists seven Sillaman family heads as living in Northampton and Northumberland counties, Pennsylvania. The 1800 Census lists four Sillyman family heads as living in Northampton County; three Siliman families and two Saliman families living in Northumberland County; and one Silliman family as living in Berks County. We can only infer that these early, not-too-educated census takers were doing their best to spell the name as it sounded to them.

It appears that by 1830 most Pennsylvania Sillymans had changed the spelling of their name, with a few exceptions, to Silliman as was true in north Ireland. A few families preferred the spelling Sillaman, especially those who migrated to Western Pennsylvania.

While, with the single exception of the John Silliman whose will was proved in New Jersey in 1755, it has been impossible to identify positively the Ulster or North Ireland ancestor of all the founders of the family in America, it is obvious that there

were many more Sillimans or Sillymans living in North Ireland than the present records there would indicate.

An Alexander Silliman of Cumberland County, New Jersey, whose will was probated in 1786, may have been a direct emigrant from North Ireland and a relative, if not a brother, of the John Silliman of Broad Island, North Ireland, whose own will was proved in 1784.

It is also a known fact that the already mentioned John Silliman who came to America in 1771-72, and who died in York District, South Carolina in 1826, was a native of Carncastle, North Ireland, having been born there in 1747. He brought with him a certificate of good character stating:

“That the bearer, John Silliman, has lived in this parish from his infancy, free from Publick Scandal, or ground of Church censure: is certified at Carncastle, April 27, 1771, by John Lewson.”

Letters from the Hon. John R. Silliman¹ written to his sister, Gertrude Mullings, and a family record of the descendants of her great grandfather, John Silliman (born in Carncastle in 1747, compiled by Mrs. Mullings, show that when John R. Silliman was in Washington (perhaps in 1913 or 1914) he had an invitation from a Mr. Hugh Silliman, of Thyatira, North Carolina, to visit him. He accepted the invitation. According to Mrs. Mullings, as learned from her brother, Hugh Silliman was “a substantial Presbyterian elder, with a fine family of children.” The great grandfather of Hugh Silliman was also a John Silliman who came from North Ireland and had been a soldier in the Revolutionary War. Family records showed that their John Silliman “bought land in Rowan County, North Carolina in 1774.” Even the names of the children of the two Johns were similar, “but there were other names—Joel and Robert.” (The names of the four sons of the South Carolina John were Thomas, John Jr., William and James.) “There was

¹ John R. Silliman was born in 1855 and died in 1919. He was a Princeton graduate and a close friend of Woodrow Wilson. He served as a Consul in Mexico during the Vera Cruz incident.

also a son James, born in 1785 in Rowan County, North Carolina, married Elizabeth Miller, had a family of eight sons and daughters, died in 1848, age 63 years."

Further research on the Sillimans of North Carolina should be undertaken as the above would indicate that this John Silliman may have a considerable number of descendants still living in the South or the Southwest.

Further research is also needed in regard to North Ireland records. A thorough examination of gravestones in Templecorran, Island Magee, Glynn and Larne areas could reveal further Silliman or Sillyman names. Records relating to the estates of the Earl of Antrim are expected to be made available to the public within the next few years. Since most of the land in the Carncastle area belonged to the Earl of Antrim in the 17th and 18th centuries, these records may prove of considerable interest.

2. Conditions in North Ireland That Led to the Scotch-Irish Migration to America

It is interesting to note that the first English settlement in Virginia and the first Scotch-English settlements in Ulster occurred almost simultaneously. Both were undertaken and greatly influenced by King James I of England and Scotland. The plan of planting Ulster with Scotch and English protestants was worked out in 1609 and settlements began the next year. However, the actual settlers were mainly Scotch and "the Ulster plantation took the character of a Scotch occupation of the North of Ireland."¹ The ouster of the native Irish and the possession of their land was made easier by a native uprising and the famous flight of the Earls in 1607. Because of the nearness of North Ireland to Scotland, unlike the voyages to distant and unknown Virginia, colonization was rapid. In a report made in 1618 by the Muster-Master of Ul-

¹Henry Jones Ford, *The Scotch-Irish in America*, Princeton University Press, 1915. This book is the principal source for this and the following section. All further reference to the book will be cited as Ford.

ster the holdings of the English and Scottish Undertakers amounted to 197,000 acres, and an additional 51,720 acres belonged to servitors.² As proof of the rapid growth of population, Ford cites the work of a leading authority, a work published in 1736, which estimates that by 1641 one hundred thousand Scotch and twenty thousand English had settled in Ulster. Thus Ulster, which had formerly been the most backward province of Ireland, was soon to become the most populous and wealthy. However, this very prosperity would eventually cause trouble and be resented by London merchants, manufacturers and traders just as it was to cause trouble in the American colonies through trade restrictions. But even more obnoxious to the heirs of John Calvin and John Knox were the religious restrictions and the efforts of the English government, especially after the restoration of Charles II, to force the people of North Ireland to conform to the established Church of England. The first to suffer from the persecutions that followed were the Presbyterians. As early as 1661 according to Ford, sixty-one Presbyterian ministers of Ulster were ejected from their benefices.

After 1700 Trade laws and religious tests became even more severe. A penal act of 1704 expressly excluded Presbyterians from both Civil and military office. Presbyterian ministers became legally liable, with severe penalties, for performing marriages. To escape these conditions, entire congregations, together with their ministers, began to flee to America, as had the earlier New England, Pennsylvania and Maryland emigrants and other non-conformists in their search for religious freedom.

In 1718 a Presbyterian minister in Ulster wrote "no less than six ministers have demitted their congregations (to the

² Servitors were officers in the King's service; undertakers were persons given land, usually 2,000 acres, under bond to undertake to gather Scotch and English colonists within a period of three years; build a castle, or stone or brick house within three years; provide a specified number of armed men with muskets and other weapons. They had to pay a small yearly rent to the Crown but their lease was considered to be perpetual.

American plantations) and great numbers of other people go with them; so that we are daily alarmed with both ministers and people going away."

In March 1729 Archbishop Boulter wrote, "The humor of going to America still continues—there are now seven ships at Belfast that are carrying off about 1,000 passengers thither." The reasons given for their leaving were (1) the religious test excluding Presbyterians from all places of public trust and honor; (2) bad seasons for three years past; (3) high prices for land and tythes.

Another authority states that in 1737 "multitudes of laborers and husbandmen oppressed by landlords and bishops, and unable to procure a comfortable substance for their families embarked for Carolina." The general exodus of the 1720's and that of the early thirties was given further impetus by the famine years of 1740-44.

By 1760 conditions in North Ireland had improved and, according to Ford, "the exodus to America seems to have almost ceased." However a decade later distress and discontent were again general and emigration to America was resumed on a large scale.

Ford further cites Killens, *History of the Presbyterian Church in Ireland*, for the statement that "in 1773 and the five preceding years, the North of Ireland was drained of one-fourth of its trading cash, and of a like proportion of its manufacturing people." Killins also confirms the fact that ministers were also leaving: "some of the members of the Synod of Ulster resigned their pastoral charges and joined the stream of emigration to America."

Another reason given for this general exodus of the 1770's was the decadence of linen manufacturing which set in after 1771 because of the interruption of commerce and the troubles between the British and their American colonies. It was estimated that as a result of these troubles a third of the weavers had been thrown out of work and that between 1771 and 1774 no less than 10,000 persons emigrated to America.

Another writer of the period, Arthur Young, in his *Tour*

of Ireland, comments: "The spirit of emigration in Ireland appears to be confined to two circumstances, the Presbyterian religion, and the linen manufacture. I hear of very few emigrants except manufacturers of that persuasion." He goes on to point out that the chief cash product of North Ireland was the production and manufacture of linen. "When the linen trade was low emigration was high." The trade was not confined to towns alone but spread into "all the cabins of the land" or as they would be called today, cottage industries. These half manufacturers and half farmers had only to convert their property and cattle into cash for their passage fare to America with a little left over for the purchase of new cheap land there, if not for free land on the frontiers of Pennsylvania, or the Carolinas. The John Sillyman who is known to have sold his lease of land in 1803 to John McCrea for 400 pounds would have had no difficulty in transporting his entire family to America with passage fare at 9 pounds per passenger.

It was the troubled years of the 1720's and early thirties that led the early pioneer Silliman families into Pennsylvania and at least two Silliman families into New Jersey. It was during the general exodus of the 1770's that John Silliman of Carncastle found a new home and the beginning of a new life in South Carolina—while at almost the same time another John Silliman from an unknown town in North Ireland was settling in North Carolina. Both Johns were to have sons named Thomas, James and John. Both of the senior Johns were Presbyterians and deeply religious men—and both were shortly to play their part when the Scotch-Irish settlers of the Carolinas were to rise to arms in firm resistance to the British soldiers after all other resistance had ceased. It was only, as one historian has stated, "in the western section (of the Carolinas) where Scotch-Irish settlements were thick" that the people really began to fight and they kept on fighting until the battles of Cowpens and King's Mountain were won, and General Cornwallis was "marching from the Carolinas" to his final defeat at Yorktown.

Earlier in the war the Scotch-Irish of Eastern Pennsylv-

vania had played their part in rallying to the defense of General Washington after he had been forced to cross the Delaware. These were the darkest days of the war. Philadelphia was lost—desertions alarming—the Tory cause on the upgrade—and one more defeat or the capture of General Washington could have won the war for the English. But across the Delaware, Washington met men of sterner character—"men of staunch loyalty." According to one authority, "As soon as Washington had crossed the Delaware he was in touch with the Scotch-Irish settlements in Bucks and Northampton counties and felt the sustaining influence of active popular support. Clothing and blankets were collected—the Rev. John Rosburg, pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Allen and Lower Mount Bethel, Northampton County, raised a company and brought it to join the Continental Army." (There was at least one Sillyman member of this church who joined the army at this time.) Nowhere were the people more united in their war efforts.

More important than even the direct aid was the assurance of protection against surprise by volunteer scouts in every direction. The Scotch-Irish farmers could be depended upon to watch the roads and convey prompt intelligence of movement in any quarter. With his base of operations thus made secure Washington was in a position to conceive and execute the brilliant exploits by which he gained military renown.¹ The initiative was again his. The road now led to Trenton, Princeton, Philadelphia, and to Yorktown.

It is not known how many Pennsylvania Sillymans or Silimans actually participated in the Revolution as scouts or in other non-military ways. A copy of a letter, in the possession of the writer, of a descendant of Alexander Sillyman, records the story of how the young Alexander had accompanied his mother "when she carried food to Washington's soldiers." Alexan-

¹ The English historian, William E. Lecky, pays tribute to the part played by the Scotch-Irish "who fled by the thousands from Antrim and Down counties after 1771 because of renting practices of landlords and exorbitant renewal rents after their leases had expired, to form a part of the revolutionary armies that were to sever the New World from the British Crown."

der, born in Northampton County in 1764, was twelve years old at the time.

A son of Thomas and Agnes, Squire Thomas Sillyman, who was too old to be a soldier, more than did his part as a member of the Committee of Correspondence and in other ways. Two of his sons fought in the Revolution. In all there were six Pennsylvania Sillymans who are known to have served in the Revolution. Thus any grievances the Carolina Sillimans and the Sillymans of Pennsylvania may have had against British Rule in North Ireland, were repaid with interest on the banks of the Delaware and in the western hills and mountains of North and South Carolina.

3. The Establishment of New Homes in America

The first distinctive Scotch-Irish settlements known to have taken place in America were in the Chesapeake Bay area and on the Eastern coast of Maryland. These settlers were attracted to Maryland by Lord Baltimore's liberal policies welcoming all in search of religious freedom. The first Presbyterian minister, according to Ford, of whom there is definite knowledge was William Traill, who was released from prison in 1682 and then went to Maryland. On May 8, 1688 he acquired 133 acres of land near Rehoboth and it is believed that he was the founder of the Rehoboth Presbyterian Church. Another minister, Thomas Wilson, was in 1691 a pastor at Manakin.

It is also known that Scotch-Irish colonists, fleeing from persecution, landed in 1685 in East Jersey. During this same period others settled in New York but according to Ford, it was not until the great wave of Ulster emigration in 1718 that Scotch-Irish settlements in New York and New Jersey became distinctively noticeable.

The first record of Scotch-Irish settlers in South Carolina occurs in 1682. Holme's *American Annals* states that by 1737

"multitudes" had embarked for Carolina. The first colony received a grant of land near the Santee River, the settlement later to be called Williamsburg township. By 1764 it is noted, two townships, each containing 48,000 acres, had been laid out "one named Mecklenburg, the other Londonderry," the former to gain fame for its alleged Declaration of Independence from British rule on May 20, 1775.

During the period 1714-1720 there was also active emigration from Ulster to New England. Five ships landed there in 1714; two in 1715; three in 1716; six in 1717; fifteen in 1718; ten in 1719 and thirteen in 1720. However, it is recorded that they did not receive a warm welcome there (especially in Boston) and as a result most of them moved on to the frontiers "to serve as a barrier against the Indians." Dissatisfied with their treatment, many moved to other colonies such as New Hampshire, Maine, Connecticut, New York but "the greater number removed to Pennsylvania."¹

Pennsylvania, because of its geography and other favorable conditions, was destined to become the center of the Scotch-Irish impact upon the New World and the staging ground for further migrations through the passes and rivers leading to the west and especially the southwest.² Pennsylvania was easily accessible to the New York harbor and then overland across narrow New Jersey. It was even more accessible by the Delaware Bay and River, and by Chesapeake Bay and the Susquehanna River.

It is little wonder that Edmund Burke could write in his *European Settlements in America*, published in 1761—"In some years more people have transported themselves into Pennsylvania than into all the other settlements together. In 1729, 6,208 persons came to settle here—four fifths of whom at least were from North Ireland. These are chiefly Presbyterians from the northern part of Ireland, who in America are generally

¹ Ford, p. 234.

² The Scotch-Irish settlements of Western Pennsylvania actually did not take place until after settlements had been made in western Maryland and Virginia. The trans-Allegheny settlements date after 1771.

called Scotch-Irish." Holmes' *Annals* gives for the year 1729 the same figure (6,208) for the number of arrivals for Pennsylvania but states that 4,500 of these were from north Ireland.

James Logan, Secretary for the Province of Pennsylvania, wrote in November, 1727: "We have from the North of Ireland great numbers yearly. Eight or nine ships this last fall discharged at Newcastle (Delaware)." In 1729 he states, "It looks as if Ireland is to send all its inhabitants hither, for last week not less than six ships arrived." It is estimated that from December 1728 to December 1729 between five and six thousand Scotch-Irish settled in Pennsylvania. By 1749 it was estimated that the Scotch-Irish population of Pennsylvania was 1/4 of the whole, and in 1774 "Benjamin Franklin computed the proportion as one-third out of a total of 350,000."¹

The earliest records indicate that the first Pennsylvania settlements were in the triangular projection between Delaware and Maryland that now belongs to Chester County.² The early settlers followed the river valleys. One stream moved up the Delaware River. By 1720, Scotch-Irish settlers were in Bucks County and in what is now Northampton County (originally a part of Bucks County). Others settled in the Susquehanna Valley. By 1750 there were also large Scotch-Irish settlements in Chester, Lancaster, and Dauphen counties. From these centers their children and their children's children would move ever westward where today Sillimans are to be found in every state of the Union from Pennsylvania to California.

The Sillimans of Pennsylvania followed this common pattern. They moved first from Northampton County to Berks, Schuylkill and Northumberland Counties. In 1802 James and Mary Hunter Silliman sold their land in Northumberland County and the entire family consisting of six children, the youngest only six weeks old, moved by covered wagon to Erie County, Pennsylvania. All arrived safely including the horses, cattle, seed corn and wheat, and the only loss was three sheep that

¹ Ford, p. 265.

² The boundary line between Maryland and Pennsylvania was not settled until 1774.

died on the way "one having been run over by the wagon." James' letters back to his mother, brothers and sisters (copies of which are now in the possession of the writer) speak of no hardship but only of thankfulness to his Creator for their safe journey.

Another Silliman family, Alexander and Jane Foresman Silliman, moved in 1847, also by covered wagon, all the way from White Deer Valley to Three Rivers, Michigan.¹

The descendants of such sturdy, hard-working, courageous, self-reliant, and God-fearing people have every right to be proud of their lineage. The descendants of these early Silliman pioneers have been remarkably successful in business and in other undertakings as the following pages will show. They have been men of honor, and to this day it is rare to meet a Silliman who can trace his ancestor back to a Pennsylvania Silliman or a South Carolina Silliman, who is not a Presbyterian. A well-known Presbyterian minister, Alexander P. Silliman, a grandson of John Silliman of South Carolina and the grandfather of William Calvin Silliman, upon his graduation from Princeton University prior to 1850, travelled by horse-back from New Jersey to South Carolina selling Bibles along the way to pay for lodging and food for himself and his horse. Resourcefulness has always been a Silliman family trait. Like others of Scotch-Irish descent they have stood firm and held true to their religious beliefs and principles because their roots are deep and strong—firmly embedded in Ulster soil.

Henry Jones Ford ends his excellent history of the Scotch-Irish in America with the following quotation from another author, in an attempt to describe the distinguishing characteristics of the Ulster Scots and their Scotch-Irish descendants in America:

(These distinguishing characteristics are) "an econo-

¹ Alexander Silliman was a son of Captain Thomas Sillyman of Revolutionary fame. The story of their travels and hardships of the journey was personally related to the writer in 1938 by a granddaughter of Alexander, Miss Sue I. Silliman, who was at the time secretary of the D.A.R. for the State of Michigan.

my and even parsimony of words, which does not always betoken a poverty of ideas; an insuperable dislike to wear his heart upon his sleeve, or make a display of the deeper and more tender feelings of his nature; a quiet and undemonstrative deportment which may have great firmness and determination behind it; a dour exterior which may cover a really generous disposition and kindly heart; much caution, wariness and reserve, but a decision, energy or character, and tenacity of purpose which, as in the case of Enoch Arden, 'hold his will and bear it through;' a very decided practical faculty which has an eye on the main chance, but which may co-exist with a deep-lying fund of sentiment; a capacity for hard work and close application to business which, with thrift and patient persistence, is apt to bear fruit in considerable success; in short, a reserve of strength, self-reliance, courage and endurance which, when an emergency demands (as behind the walls of Derry) may surprise the world."

CHAPTER II

THOMAS AND AGNES

1. The Hunter Settlement

As pointed out in the previous chapter, by 1727 large numbers were leaving North Ireland for the American colonies and especially for Pennsylvania. It was not uncommon for neighbors to band together and to arrive in a single group or for almost an entire congregation to uproot itself and to travel together under the leadership of their minister or a chosen elder of their church. Such a group, to arrive at the Forks of the Delaware (present Easton area) in 1728 or early 1729 was the Hunter Colony.¹ It was composed of about thirty families under their chosen leader, Alexander Hunter, a Presbyterian elder.

Persons known to have composed the group were Thomas and Agnes Sillyman and the Lyle, McCrea, McFarren, McCracken, Beard, Miller, Campbell, Boyd, Henderson and Nelson families. Others who may have been with the original group or were to join them shortly, as did the Rea family who had first settled in New Jersey and where their son Samuel had been born in 1732, were the Wilson and Scott families. Since other Scotch-Irish settlers, such as those in the Craig Settlement under the leadership of Col. Thomas Craig, Hugh Wilson, John Boyd and Thomas Armstrong, had preceeded them to the Forks area and had chosen the choice farm sites

¹ The Forks of the Delaware or "the Forks" included in 1730 the entire area east of the Blue Mountain and north of the Lehigh river which rises in northeast Pa. and flows south with a wide bend past Allentown and Bethlehem to the Delaware river at Easton. The Forks remained as a part of the original Bucks County until 1752 when the Forks area, including Forks township, was taken from Bucks County to become Northampton County.

along the mouth of the Lehigh river and the Bushkill creek, the Hunter settlers chose for their future homes the locality which began seven miles farther up the Delaware and a half mile inland from the mouth of Martins Creek and extending northward toward the present village of Richmond. Their first house of worship just north of Martins Creek was the Bethel Presbyterian Church from which the two Mount Bethel townships later derived their names. In time some of the settlers from the original Hunter Settlement or their sons, together with others who continued to arrive, moved still farther north to the present village or township of Mt. Bethel, but this settlement, known at first as Upper Mt. Bethel, did not become a township until 1787, and became incorporated as the town of Mount Bethel in 1836. The original Bethel which became a township in 1746 then became known after 1787 as Old or Lower Mount Bethel. Davis, in his *History of Bucks Co.*, states that Thomas Silliman and Alexander Hunter signed the petition in 1746 to have this township bounded. The real purpose in making it a township was so that the people living in the northern settlements could have a voting district nearer than the Forks township which centered around the junction of the Delaware and Lehigh rivers and is known today as the Greater Easton area. Easton, which was named after the father-in-law of Thomas Penn was never a township. The town itself was laid out in 1752, the same year that Northampton County was organized as a separate county from Bucks County. While the principal seat of justice and administration for the new county and the seat of the Indian Conference in 1756 and 1761, Easton did not become a borough until 1789.

The area between Lower and Upper Mount Bethel and between the Delaware river and Blue Mountain has been described as hilly and rolling, with limestone soil well cultivated and very productive. To one who has visited both this area and the area between Larne and Carncastle in North Ireland, the similarities between the clean cultivated fields and meadows of today and the countryside in general are quite striking.

While the original Bethel church is no longer standing and all the early sessional records have been lost, the nearby Presbyterian cemetery is still well maintained and surrounded by a well-built four-foot stone wall. Many names and dates, however, are no longer legible because of the age and poor quality of the stones. Among the legible stones, however, one may still read such inscriptions as:

Alex Miller, d. September 5, 1765, age 84.

Robert Lyle, Esq. d. Dec. 9, 1765, age 67.

Samuel Rea, Sept. 19, 1813, age 81

Here lie the remains of Jennet (Rea) wife of Alexander Sillyman (dates no longer legible).

A visit to this cemetery can be a thrilling experience for any descendant of these pioneer settlers for, as stated in a publication of the Northampton County Historical Society, *The Scotch-Irish of Northampton County* (1926),

If a visit is paid to the locality of what is familiarly known as the Three Churches at Martins Creek, in Lower Mt. Bethel township. . . there will be found the old burying ground, where lie the ashes of many of the Scotch-Irish families who belonged to the Hunter Settlement.

While their graves can no longer be found, it can be assumed that Thomas and Agnes Sillyman lie in this cemetery together with their son Alexander and their grandson Alexander and his wife Janet. Near by are the graves of their neighbors the Lyles, McCreas, Nelsons, McFarrens and Reas who were also their neighbors in North Ireland.

2. Known Facts About Thomas and Agnes

Very little is actually known about Thomas or his wife, Agnes, other than that Thomas was born in Antrim County, Ulster North Ireland, and that he and his wife were members of the original Hunter settlement. They were, of course, Presbyterians. We may assume that like the other pioneer Scotch-

Irish home seekers their first years were busy ones, spent in building a home and in clearing new land, for the Martin Creek area has been described as having been heavily wooded. The Mount Bethel area consists of rolling and hilly land and is located about half a mile west of the Delaware river. Life was not easy, but the religious freedom they now enjoyed, and the prospect of a better future for their growing sons made up for any hardships they may have suffered.

Thomas and Agnes were still living in Mount Bethel in 1746 at which time Thomas signed a petition to have Mount Bethel organized into a township. We also know that he was able to acquire more land as he grew older. Pennsylvania Archive Records show that he was given a land grant for 25 acres which was surveyed on March 16, 1747. He later received a second grant for fifty acres which was surveyed on August 14, 1751. A census record in 1758 at the time of the French and Indian wars reveals that Thomas "owned a wagon" and four "draught" horses. It is not known whether any of his horses were taken from him for military service.

Thomas died in 1762 leaving no will. His estate was administered by his son (Squire) Thomas of Forks township who, together with his fellow bondsman, Edward Rincker of Easton, provided a bond on September 8, 1763 of one hundred pounds as administrators. The official appointment of Thomas had been made on March 22, 1763.

Other known sons of Thomas and Agnes were Alexander and John. The only record found so far regarding this John are proprietary tax records that show that he was living in Forks Township in 1772. He is listed as John Sillaman, farmer. His tax was just half the amount paid by his brother, Squire Thomas, for the same year. John and his son, Thomas, are specifically mentioned in the Will of Agnes in 1774. John's only son, Thomas, who married Nancy Nelson (see Chapt. IX) is known to have lived and died in Lower Mount Bethel on property that John may have inherited from his parents, Thomas and Agnes, or from the parents of Nancy.

Agnes died prior to February 20, 1778—the date her Will was probated. This Will (a most interesting document) was dated April 25th, 1774. At this time she was no longer living in Lower Mount Bethel but in Forks Township—with her son, Squire Thomas, who is known to have spent most of his adult life in this township. The Will of Agnes reads as follows:

In the name of God Amen April ye 25th 1774 I Agnes Silliman (sic.) of the forks Township & County of Northampton Being weake in body but of Sound memory Blessed Be God do this day make & ordain this my Last will & Testament In manner of following that is to say first I Give to my Granddaughter Agnes Silliman (her oldest granddaughter and namesake and the daughter of her son, Thomas) Twenty Pounds with all my household furnitor also to my Daughter in Law Sarah (Sarah Nelson, second wife of her son, Thomas) Four Pounds twelve shillings to her & her children after George Beard's note to be Divided among my three grand sons vis: — Thomas, Alexander & James Silliman . . . to my Son Alexander all that he is Indebted to me to him and his Children. Likewise to my son John all that he is Indebted to me to his Son Thomas and all the rest to my Son Thomas and I do hereby revoke and disavow all former wills & testaments made by me & do Constitute & appoint Samuel Rea and John McFarren Sr. To be my Executors of this my Last will and Testament.

The witnesses were John Lyle, Mary McFarren and Robert Lyle. From the above Will it would appear that Thomas and Agnes had accumulated considerable property during their lifetime and that Agnes had been able to loan money to others and especially to help her sons Alexander and John. Her concern for all her children and her grandchildren is most interesting. The land that Thomas and Agnes had owned in Lower Mount Bethel had no doubt been divided, after the death of Thomas in 1762, among her three sons, or prior to March 25, 1773 at which time her son Thomas had filed his final settlement papers with the court.

3. Alexander and Margaret

Alexander, son of Thomas and Agnes, spent his entire life as a farmer in Mount Bethel, later known as Lower Mount Bethel, where he died in late 1774, after a prolonged and lingering illness. While little is known about him, except that he was born in North Ireland, he fortunately left a lengthy Will dated June 1, 1773, which was probated on December 1, 1774. This Document opens with the statement, "I, Alexander Sillyman of Mount Bethel. . . yeoman being very Sick of Body but of Good and perfect memory thanks be to Almighty God. . . being penitent and Sorry from the Bottom of my heart for my Sins past, most humbly desiring forgiveness for the same I give and Commit my soul to Almighty God and Redeemer. . ."

Several lines follow in the same religious vein. In speaking of his "Estate" and other "Goods" he adds "as it hath pleased God far above my deserts to Bestow upon me." His first provision was for the payment of all "Debts and Dues as I owe in Right or Conscience to any person or persons whatsoever." His next thought was of his "dearly and well beloved wife Margaret Sillyman" to whom he left during her natural lifetime all his personal possessions, house-hold goods and the like—but upon her death his eldest son Thomas was to have the family "chest," while the family "Spinning Wheel" was to go to his daughter, "Isabella."

His wife was also to "have right to the place during her natural Life or till she had a mind to remove and then the place to be Sold and Equally Divided between my Wife and Children." The "place" no doubt was the farm he may have inherited from his father Thomas or additional land he may have acquired.

He definitely specified that "my Bible I leave to my Dearly beloved wife Margaret Sillyman during her natural Life and then to my Son James after her Decease." His Bible was no doubt one of his most cherished possessions. We may also deduct from the Will that Alexander was not only a man of deep

religious faith and a devoted husband, but also he was deeply concerned about all his children and wanted them to share equally in the distribution of his property. He was especially concerned about his youngest son, David, who was only seven years old in 1773, and his education, as shown by the following provision:

"I Will that all my Effects after paying my Just Debts Remain upon the place until my Son David Sillyman be fourteen years of Age which will be the year Eighty or seven years hereafter. . . Let it be Remembered if my wife sees cause to Remove before the Expiration of the above seven years, she may cause to be sold and divided only Let there be some provision from the whole for to school David."

His love for all his children and sense of justice are further expressed in the final paragraph of his will "Mind all the children shall have an equal right to home. According their proportion of Labour and Stock the little and the Great shall be alike they shall all have one Common stock."

Alexander's love for and confidence in his wife are further revealed by his having made her the "Executrix." His will was witnessed by his neighbors, Thomas and Robert McCracken.

With the death of her husband in 1774 Margaret was left with a fair amount of property, but with six children to raise and support. Her oldest son Thomas was just seventeen and the youngest child David was barely eight years of age at the time of his father's death.

The family continued to live in Lower Mount Bethel until after the Revolution. In a Northampton County Tax List for the year 1779—under Mount Bethel Township, the name of Margaret appears merely as Widow "Silliman." In the same list is her son Thomas "Silliaman". In a Federal Tax List for Northampton County—Mount Bethel Twp. (Pa. Archive Records) for the year 1786—Thomas, John, and Alexander are shown to have paid the tax charged for Single Freemen. In a similar list for the year 1788 for *Lower* Mount Bethel, Thomas, John and David, with their names spelled Syllaman, were listed

as Single Freeman. Their brother Alexander who had married Mary Brown in 1787 was of course, no longer single.

Shortly after his marriage Alexander moved to Northumberland County and was soon followed by his two brothers James and John and their sister Isabella, who had married John Morrison. All three brothers are listed in the 1790 U.S. Federal Census as residents of Northumberland Co. The same Census records show that Thomas and his mother were still living together in Lower Mount Bethel as was David, who was now the head of a family, but as yet without children.

Thomas and his mother continued to live together in Lower Mount Bethel until after the marriage of Thomas on April 9, 1795, to Mary Middaugh. Thomas was now thirty-eight years old. A few months after his marriage Thomas and his bride, together with his mother, Margaret (or Margo as she was affectionately called by her children and grandchildren as shown by their letters to her), moved to the White Deer Valley in Northumberland County. Margaret continued to live with her son and daughter-in-law until her death in 1807 or early 1808. She is buried in the old Washington Presbyterian Church cemetery, in Washington township, just east of Elimsport, Lycoming County, Pa.

For a fuller account of the revolutionary war experience of (Capt.) Thomas and for other known facts about him and his descendants, see Chapter VI.

John, the brother of Thomas, James, Alexander and David, was still living in Northumberland Co. in 1800, but his name does not appear in the Census records of this same county in 1810. Few facts are known about him other than his official revolutionary war records which show that he served on the Frontier in 1782 (against the Indians) in the 5th Batt. under Capt. Campbell, together with his brothers, Thomas and James. Two years later his name again appears in the same 5th Batt. records together with his brothers Thomas, James and Alexander, and John Morrison, who later became the husband of Isabella. It may be assumed that the interest of the Silliman

brothers in Northumberland County and the later settlement there of all the brothers, except David, along the West and North branches of the Susquehanna River in the region still known as White Deer Valley, and Derry township, date back to their Frontier experiences during the Revolution.

David continued to live in Lower Mount Bethel until after 1800 as shown by Census records. However his name does not appear in the same Northampton records for 1810, and there is no evidence to show that he ever lived in Northumberland Co. He and his wife Maria are known to have had three daughters—Elizabeth, born in 1797; Isabella, born in 1800; and Margaretha, born in 1802.

For further information regarding James and Alexander and their descendants, see Chapters VII and VIII.

Thomas and Agnes (Emigrated from North Ireland to Pennsylvania 1728-29)

d. 1762 Will of Agnes
 proved Feb. 20, 1778

John

Squire Thomas (1713-1810)

Alexander (d. 1773)

m.

m.

2nd Sarah Nelson

Margaret

Thomas (1755-1843)

m.

Nancy Nelson

Capt. Thomas (1757-1838)

m.

Mary Middaugh

Children of Sarah Nelson

John
b. May, 21,
1751

Agnes
b. Aug. 4,
1753
m.
Joseph
Henderson

Thomas Jr.
b. Dec. 2,
1754

Alexander
b. Apr. 4,
1758
m.
Janet
Rea

James
b. Oct. 16,
1760
m.
Susanah
Hughes

(Mary

Sarah
b. Aug. 19,
1773
m.
Samuel
Brittain

Elizabeth)

CHAPTER III

SQUIRE THOMAS AND SARAH NELSON

1. Squire Thomas

Thomas, son of Thomas and Agnes, was born in North Ireland in 1713. He was not more than sixteen years of age when his parents settled at the Forks of the Delaware in 1728-29. Nothing is known of his early life except that his first years were spent with his parents in the Hunter Settlement just north of Easton, which later became Mount Bethel township. Most of his adult life, however, was spent in the Forks township or Easton area. He was already living in Forks township on March 22, 1763 when he was appointed administrator of his father's Mount Bethel estate. On September 8, 1763 he gave a bond for one hundred pounds as co-executor. He continued to administer his father's property for another ten years, for it was not until March 25, 1773 that he filed a settlement account and at the same time requested permission of the Court to sell two tracts of land in Mount Bethel. Three months later, on June 23, he reported to the Court that the property had been sold to David Allen.

In the meantime, he had acquired considerable property of his own in Forks township. Tax records, that have been preserved, show that he paid a proprietor's tax in 1772. In 1775 he paid taxes on 200 acres of farm land, and in 1776 his assessment was based "on one hundred acres of woodland, sixty acres of clean and twenty acres of mowed land." In 1785 he paid a Federal tax on 200 acres, 4 horses and 4 cattle located in Forks township, presumably the same land which he owned in 1775.

Prior to 1785 he had obtained other land, for the Pa.

Archive records show that he was given a land grant on November 25, 1784 for four hundred acres in Northampton County. On November 10, 1789 (recorded December 12, 1789) Thomas signed a bond (or mortgage) to "the Hon. Messrs. Penn" for the amount of "418 pounds 7 s. on condition of payment for two "lots of Proprietaries land called Dryland." This land, consisting of 141 acres, was deeded to Thomas by John Penn the elder and John Penn the younger, both living in England. Said property was retained by Thomas until October 3, 1803 at which time it was sold to Robert Traill of Easton who "gave a mortgage to Thomas Syllman (Silliman) of Forks township, widower to secure payment of the sum of 2,250 pounds on 141 acres in Forks Twp." This mortgage was not fully paid off until June 27, 1810, when Thomas, then living in Derry township, Northumberland County, gave his Power of Attorney to Philip Mattes of "the Borough of Easton," to execute the release of a mortgage to Robert Traill. The witnesses of this document which began "I, Thomas. . . of the township of Derry," were William Brittain¹ and Andrew Sheep, Jr.

Thomas was not only a man of substantial means, but he was also a respected citizen. In 1775 he signed a request, dated June 18, that Irish Catholics should not be granted licenses for saloons as "this promoted disloyalty to the cause of the Patriots for Independence." In 1775, according to Pennsylvania Archive Records, Thomas served as a representative from "Forks" on the Northampton County Committee of Correspondence which met in Easton on August 28 and October 2. In 1776 he was still a member of the same Committee, "one of five members."

On November 6, 1776 Thomas and Garret Middaugh served as judges of an election for Northampton County. Another

¹ William Brittain was the older brother of Samuel Brittain, who married Sarah Silliman, daughter of Squire Thomas and Sarah Nelson. William and Samuel were the elder sons of Nathaniel Brittain, who continued to live in Lower Mount Bethel until his death in October, 1817.

record shows that on October 28, 1784 he again signed an Easton election return.

In 1777 he was a member, together with his friend, Samuel Rea, of the first Court of Justice for "the county of Northampton in the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania" held in Easton on June 17. Records from this date on, in general, refer to him as Squire Thomas. In the Northampton County Tax List for 1779 his name appears as "Thomas Silliman Esq.," Forks township. On October 12 of this same year he and Samuel Rea were among the signers of an "Address of the Inhabitants of Northampton County" to Major General Sullivan, congratulating him upon his success as the Commander-in-Chief of the Western Army against the confederated tribes of Indians who were cooperating with the British against the American Continental cause in upper New York and the Pennsylvania frontiers.

Samuel Rea and Thomas were lifelong friends. Samuel had been one of the two executors of Thomas' mother's Will made out in 1774. Both Thomas and Samuel served as fellow justices on the first Northampton County court in 1777. The two families were further united by the marriage of Thomas' son, Alexander, to Janet Rea, a daughter of Samuel. Later Thomas and Samuel themselves were to marry sisters. After the death of Thomas' first wife (name unknown), he married Sarah Nelson, who was considerably younger than he. Samuel, after the death of his wife, Ann McCracken, in 1781, married Rebecca Nelson. Sarah and Rebecca were the sisters of Capt. John Nelson and the daughters of Jonathan and Sarah Nelson who were still living in Lower Bethel township in 1787.

When Thomas married Sarah Nelson, he was already the father of five children. His oldest son, John, had been born on May 21, 1751, and his eldest daughter, Agnes (Nancy) was born on August 4, 1753. The latter married Joseph Henderson and later moved to Derry township, Northumberland County (now Montour County). Thomas' second son, Thomas Jr., was born on December 2, 1754. Alexander, the husband of Janet

Rea, was born on April 4, 1758. Thomas' youngest son, James, who married Susanah Hughes, was born on October 16, 1760. Thus Thomas' marriage to Sarah Nelson may have occurred anytime between 1762 and 1765. The children of this second marriage were: Jane; William; Mary, whose married name was Barber; Sarah, who was born on August 19, 1773 and who died on September 3, 1845. Sarah was married in 1796 at Forks township to Samuel Brittain of Lower Mount Bethel. Shortly after their marriage the Brittains moved to Derry township, Northumberland County.¹ The youngest child of Thomas and Sarah was named Elizabeth. All of the five children of Thomas and Sarah Nelson are specifically named in the Will of their grandfather, Jonathan Nelson, as children of his daughter "Sarah, deceased," who married Thomas Silliman. Jane and William are believed to have died in infancy or before April 24, 1804 since Thomas, in his Will of that date, mentions by name all his five children by his first marriage, but only "my daughters Mary, Sarah and Elizabeth," the children of Sarah Nelson. Furthermore, his mother Agnes, in her Will of April 25, 1774 had referred to these same children only as Sarah's children "to my Daughter in Law Sarah. . . to her and her children. . . ." Sarah Nelson died some time prior to 1789 as her father in his Will refers to her as deceased.

Squire Thomas continued to live in Forks township until late 1803. On October 3 he sold 141 acres of land to Robert Traill, a prominent citizen of Easton. Soon after this date he moved to Derry township, in Northumberland County, where his oldest daughter, Nancy Henderson, wife of Joseph, and his younger daughter, Sarah Brittain, had already established their homes. He was still living in Derry township on June 18, 1810

¹ According to *A History of the Brittain Family* by Sallie Waston, Samuel Brittain came to Northumberland County in 1796 and bought 300 acres of wilderness land—their first home being a log cabin. Their original land was located northeast of the present village of Washingtonville in what is now Montour County, which became a separate county from Northumberland in 1850.

when he gave his Power of Attorney to his "trusted friend, Andrew Sheep, Jr." to settle up his numerous accounts and affairs in Northampton County. His mind must have remained clear until the end. He died in Derry township, Northumberland County on December 24, 1810, at the age of ninety-seven.

Even in 1804 he had begun to feel his age, for in his Will he speaks of himself as "I, Thomas. . . late of Forks township, advanced in years. . . ." His Will, dated April 24, 1804, was probated on January 7, 1811. He is buried in the Derry Presbyterian Cemetery, five miles northeast of the present village of Washingtonville (now Montour County), behind the old Derry Presbyterian Church which is today the oldest house of worship in the area. His daughter, Sarah Brittain, her husband Samuel and four of their children are buried in this same cemetery. Near by are the graves of Thomas' eldest daughter, Nancy, and her husband, Joseph Henderson. Samuel Brittain died on March 19, 1844 and Sarah on September 3, 1845. Nancy Henderson died on June 20, 1825 and Joseph, on April 3, 1838.

Thomas had lived a rich and full life. When his parents first settled at the Forks of the Delaware, most of the area was still a wilderness. He had lived through the French and Indian Wars and the Indian massacres in the upper Susquehanna valley. He had also played a part in the American Revolution and had helped to establish a new nation. He had lived through the so-called critical period of American History (1783-1787). By 1810 James Madison was serving his first term as the Fourth President of the new Republic. However, Napoleon Bonaparte was threatening to disturb the peace, and new leaders (the War Hawks) had come into power. Again there was a growing demand for war with England, but Thomas did not live to see this war in which three of his grandsons would participate.

2. John

While there are few recorded facts about any of the chil-

dren of Squire Thomas, except his younger sons, Alexander and James, we do know from authentic Bible records the exact dates of birth of each of his sons.

Thus it is known that John, the eldest son of Squire Thomas, was born on May 21, 1751. While John would have been twenty-five years old in 1776, there is no record of his having fought in the Revolution. However, it is known that he was married prior to 1775 and that he had a son, Samuel, who was born in 1776.

John being the eldest son, is the first person mentioned in the Will of his father, Squire Thomas, dated April 24, 1804: "I, Thomas. . . bequeath unto my three sons John, Thomas and Alexander. . . unto my dau. Nancy. . . to my son James. . . ."

Where John (who was already 53 years old in 1804) may have been living, or how many children he may have had by 1804, is not known. He had definitely left Northampton County prior to 1790 since there is no mention of any John as living there in the census records of 1790 or 1800. His youngest brother James had left Northampton County prior to 1790, and he and his family were living in Windsor Township, Berks Co. in 1790. Since John was nine years older than James, it may be surmised that he had preceded James to one of the newly organized western counties such as Berks which was organized in 1752 or even Lebanon County before moving on to Lancaster County where he eventually settled prior to 1810.

The Federal census of 1810 lists "John Silliman" as the head of an extremely large family consisting of: "one male over 45; two males 26 to 45; one male 16 to 26; one male 10 to 16; two males under 10; one female over 45; one female 26 to 45; one female 16 to 26; one female 10 to 16; one female under 10, and four white others." The younger descendants may have been the children of a married son or daughter.

John was fifty-nine years old at this time. The one male over 45 was, of course, John himself. One of the two males 26 to 45 was his still unmarried son, Samuel, born in 1776 and

thirty-four years old at this time. Samuel was married in late 1811 (or early 1812) and continued to live in Lancaster County until shortly before 1825 when he moved his family to the Pittsburgh area. (See Chapter V)

A second son was John who was twenty-six years old in 1810. John continued to live in Lancaster County until 1833 at which time he moved to Westmoreland County. He is listed in the 1820 Census (Lancaster County) as the head of a family consisting of: "one male 26 to 45; one male under 10; one female 16 to 26; and one female under 10." His son, John Benton, born May 16, 1819, died in East Huntingdon township, Westmoreland County, on February 20, 1892. A second son, James B., who married Louise Tarr, was born in Lancaster County on January 24, 1827 and died December 2, 1903 also in East Huntingdon township. He became a school teacher and later served as the Westmoreland County Superintendent of Schools. Five of his granddaughters—the children of his son, John Benton, who was born on January 13, 1864 and who died in Wilkinsburg on March 8, 1937, were to become school teachers. A number of the descendants of both John B. and James B. are still living in the Wilkinsburgh-Greater Pittsburgh area. James Willard Silliman, Jr., a grandson of James B., is a prominent doctor in Latrobe, Pa.

3. Thomas, Jr.

Thomas, Jr. the second son of Squire Thomas, was born on December 2, 1754. Although twenty-two years of age at the outbreak of the Revolution, there is no record of his having participated in the War, as did his younger brothers, Alexander and James. Tax records show that a Thomas Sylliman, Jr. paid a Federal tax in 1786 on seventy acres of land, two horses and two cattle in Mount Bethel. The 1790 Census shows that Thomas Sillaman, Jr. was the head of a family of one male over sixteen and four females. By 1800 he had left Lower Mount Bethel and was living in Forks Township. His name this time is spelled

Thomas Sillyman Jr. His father, Squire Thomas, is listed in this same Census and township as Thomas Sillyman Sr., and they were the only two by any possible spelling of the name Silliman who were residing in Forks Township in 1800. Thomas was also the only possible person at this time who could have been called "Junior." Thus the above tax and Census records can fit no one except the son of Squire Thomas.

Nothing further from 1800 on is known about him or any of his children—not even the name of his wife. Easton and Northampton records have been thoroughly checked without any reference or record having been found. Unlike his brother John, not even a single clue has been located as to where he may have gone or what may have happened to him. It is quite possible that he had no sons, or none who lived to maturity, and that he himself may have died early. However, he was still living in 1804 when his father, Thomas Sr. (Squire), made out his will and specifically named him as one of his heirs—"my sons, John, *Thomas*, Alexander. . ."

4. Alexander and Janet Rea

Alexander, the third son of Squire Thomas, was born on April 4, 1758. He was the first member of the family to see actual service in the Revolution. Official War records¹ show that he enlisted at Easton, on July 9, 1776 under Capt. John Arndt. As shown by a "Muster Roll," Capt. John Arndt's Company was a part of the 1st Batt. "of associators in the county of Northampton and Province of Pensilvania wich (sic) is to compose Part of the flying camp of Ten Thousand men, commanded by Col. Hart."

Another record from "a portion of the officers and men who served in the Northampton County Battalion of the Flying Camp in 1776" lists Alexander as serving under Capt. Nelson. There had been a reorganization of Capt. Arndt's original com-

¹ *Penna. Archive Records*, Series 5, Vol. VIII, pp. 23,-430,-426 and 540.

pany when it was incorporated as part of Col. Baxter's Battalion.

The hastily organized Flying Camp was largely composed of recruits from Bucks and Northampton Counties. Northampton troops had their initial engagement with the enemy on Long Island on Aug. 27, 1776. They were also engaged in the Battle of Fort Washington at the tip of Manhattan Island on Nov. 16, 1776. After this battle with its heavy losses and their narrow escape from capture, the Northampton Company rallied at Elizabethtown, New Jersey. On Nov. 28 General Washington began his retreat across New Jersey into Pennsylvania. With his troops scattered and many returning to their homes, the Northampton Company was discharged on Dec. 1, 1776, "having served 4 months and 22 days."

After the battle of Trenton and after that of Princeton on Jan. 3, 1777, a considerable number of Gen. Washington's original troops again rallied around him. A "General Muster Roll" of the 6th Batt. Northampton County Militia dated May 14th, 1778 lists Alexander as a member at this time, of Capt. John Nelson's 3rd Company. Serving in the same company was Samuel Rea, Alexander's future father-in-law. There are no further records of his war service.

Alexander's name does not appear in the 1790 Census records as a family head. Sometime after this date he married Janet Rea, the daughter of Samuel and Ann McCracken Rea.

Alexander and Janet were living in Lower Mount Bethel in 1800. Alexander is listed as being between 26 and 45 years of age. He was actually forty-two. The Census record would indicate that he and Janet had three daughters at this time, all under ten years of age. The only Easton record that has so far been found regarding any of these daughters is a recently discovered one in regard to the administrator's bond which John Hutchison had given, prior to his death, as an administrator of the estate of Squire Thomas. On March 1, 1821 Henry Meritt of Mansfield Twp. and his brother John Meritt of Greenwich Twp. Sussex Co., N.J. and Elisha Burd,

also of Mansfield, gave a bond to James and William Hutchison, "who had died before completing the administration of the estate of Thomas Sillyman." The bond reads "whereas Thomas Silliman by will April 24, 1804 bequeathed to his granddaughter Jane Silliman now wife of the said Henry Meritt. . ." The three above bonded men agreed that if James and William Hutchison paid (or advanced) the legacy to Jane and the estate ran short of money, they would reimburse the estate for Jane's proportionate share of the deficiency. Jane and her sisters may have become orphans at an early age. Their mother, Janet Rea, may have died before their father, as Samuel Rea does not specifically mention her, but does mention, among a long list of children and grandchildren, "my son-in-law, Alexander Sillyman." Alexander himself may have died even before 1810. A record attached to his father's Will, probated on Jan. 7, 1811, states "children of Alexander to receive his share." The original Will made out in 1804, had provided a separate bequeathal for each of his sons and an extra provision for the "children of my son, Alexander."

The early death of Alexander and Janet would explain why their names do not appear in the 1810 census and the paucity of records concerning them after 1800.

CHAPTER IV

JAMES AND SUSANAH HUGHES

1. New Homes in Berks County and Pottsville

James, the youngest son of Squire Thomas Sillyman, was born in Forks township, Northampton County, on October 16, 1760. While it is difficult to identify the specific war records of James due to the fact that he and his first cousin, James, of Lower Mount Bethel, were of similar age and neither had middle names, yet Pennsylvania Archive records definitely show that they both fought in the Revolution. Both were in Frontier Indian expeditions in 1782, one in the 2nd Battalion under Capt. John Lyle and the other under Capt. Campbell in the 5th Northampton Battalion.

Furthermore, the names of both appear on the same list as having drawn Depreciation Pay after the war for service in Northampton County as per cancelled certificates on record in the Pennsylvania State Library.

From Bible and other records still in the possession of his descendants it is definitely known that James was married in 1785 to Susanah Hughes, the daughter of Thomas Hughes of Bucks County. Susanah was born in 1761 and died on January 1, 1824 in Hamburg, Berks County. Shortly after their marriage in 1785 they moved to Berks County and in 1790 they were living in Windsor township. The Census of 1800 shows that James and his young family were living in the town of Hamburg where James continued to live until 1829.

During their early life both James and Susanah were able to acquire a considerable amount of land as shown by tax and land records. According to the Pennsylvania Archive Records both James and Susanah were given separate warrantees of

Squire Thomas

James and Susanah
1760-1847 1761-1824

Thomas 1786-1860 m. Sarah Bowen Eliza Ridgway	Nancy 1788-1853 m. James S. Kirk	Alexander 1790-1841 u.m.	James Jr. 1792-1870 m. Mary Schotz	Susan 1794-1880 m. Jacob Fisher	Samuel 1797-1859 m. Margaret Shelly	John 1801-1883 m. Margaret Bobb	Jane 1804-1844 u.m.
---	--	--------------------------------	---	---	---	---	---------------------------

Land grants for 400 acres each on November 18, 1793. This land, surveyed in January, 1794, was located on the north side of the Mahanoy Mountains in Berks County.

Another survey record, dated 8th December 1806, is for a tract of land "Situate on the Catawiskey Creek County of Northumberland Containing Three hundred eighty six acres survey for Sussanna Sillyman 21 October 1798." The drawing for this survey shows that this land was also bounded on one side by land owned by her husband.

Thus it would appear that James and Susanah acquired land in both Berks and Northumberland Counties. However, there is no record of James and Susanah ever having lived in Northumberland County, but as a soldier on the frontier he may have become interested in this part of the country. The Catawissa Creek which empties into the north branch of the Susquehanna at the present town of Catawissa about nine miles east of Danville has its head waters in the north eastern part of Schuylkill County, (a part of Burks until 1811) not too far north of Mahanoy City. This land was sold on August 26, 1806 to John Myer as shown by a Sunbury, Northumberland deed record.

In the meantime James and Susanah continued to live and prosper in the Hamburg area of Berks County and to raise a large family. Their son Thomas was born in 1786 in Hamburg, as were all their other children. Their daughter Nancy, who married James S. Kirk, was born on February 17, 1788 and died in Pottsville on October 31, 1853. Their second son Alexander, who served in the War of 1812, was born in 1790 and died on October 31, 1841. Their son James Jr. was born in 1792. On December 29, 1794 their second daughter Susan was born and died on January 14, 1880. She married Jacob Fister. Their fourth son, Samuel, was born in 1797, and their fifth son, John, was born in 1801. Their eighth child and youngest daughter, Jane, was born in 1804 and died in Pottsville on January 13, 1844. Thomas, James, Samuel and John, who moved to Pottsville after 1819 and became highly successful

businessmen and coal mine owners, will be treated separately in the following four sections of this chapter.

After the death of Susanah on January 1, 1824 James continued to live in Hamburg, with his unmarried daughter, Jane, until 1829 when he decided to sell his home and move to Pottsville where almost his entire family was now living. Here he purchased a new home in the best residential section of the town and quite near the home of his son James Jr. His daughter Jane continued to be his housekeeper. Here he lived a quiet, retired life until his death in 1847.

In a write-up about him in the *Pottsville Miners Journal* on July 3, 1847, the writer of the article speaks of him as a highly respected citizen who had lived among them for nearly eighteen years and of having seen him only a few times on the streets "except at election time when he was on his way to the ballot box to deposit his vote, a duty which neither age nor infirmity caused him to neglect up to the time of his death." The article ends with the statement that James had left a large family of children, grandchildren and great-grandchildren "to mourn his loss."

In the Presbyterian Cemetery in Pottsville, a simple but dignified tombstone in Lot 74, bears this inscription: "In memory of James Sillyman who departed this life on the 26th day of June 1847, aged 87 years."

James had been proud of the name Sillyman and had refused to change the spelling to Silliman as had his brother John before he moved to Lancaster County. His own son John and all his grandchildren felt differently about the spelling of their name, and in time it became consistently spelled Silliman by all his descendants. But in the meantime his own sons were destined to make the original name a highly respected one, for the name Sillyman and Pottsville will ever remain entwined—its first postmaster, earliest storekeepers, most successful pioneer family coal operators, and the first Civil War soldier to be buried in the town—were all descendants of James and Susanah, who had found new homes, first in Berks County and

then in Pottsville.

2. Thomas, Sarah Bowen, and Eliza Ridgway

Thomas, the eldest son of James and Susanah, was born in Berks County on February 17, 1786. He was named after his grandfather Thomas, who had served on the Northampton County Committee of Correspondence in 1775 and who served as one of the judges on the first Court of Justice for Northampton County held at Easton on June 17, 1777. Thomas is the only grandson specifically mentioned by Squire Thomas in his will of 1804.—“unto my grandson, Thomas, the eldest son of my son James. . .”

In 1807 Thomas married Sarah Bowen who was born on April 18, 1787. At the time of the 1810 Census, Thomas and Sarah were living in Brunswick township, Berks County. Marriage, however, did not prevent Thomas from briefly serving in the War of 1812, for the Pennsylvania Archive records show that “Thomas Silliman” served as “per muster roll of Inf. Company under Capt. George Zieber in the 1st Regiment, 2nd Brigade of Pa.” He was discharged at York on December 4, 1814.

After the war, Thomas continued to live near Port Clinton, where he was engaged in the lumber business and owned a small sawmill along the Schuylkill river. Port Clinton is only a few miles north of the present town of Hamburg where his father lived and just across the boundary line of Berks and Schuylkill Counties. The latter had been organized as a separate county from Berks in 1811.

In 1819 Thomas and Sarah decided to leave Port Clinton and move to the other side of the Blue Mountain, to a place that had become known as Pottsville. Before 1751 there had been few settlers north of the Blue Mountain or within the present limits of Schuylkill County. The first settlers arrived in the Pottsville area about 1780. Isaac Thomas and Lewis Reese had erected a small iron furnace in 1795 or 1796 just east of the

present town of Pottsville, which they later sold to John Pott, and his son John Jr. in 1804. In 1807 a better furnace was built which the Pott family was to operate for many years. Actually John Pott, Sr. did not move his own family to the area until 1810 when he brought his family and another son with him from their old home in Berks County. The first Pottsville home of John Pott, Sr. was a log cabin, but in 1815 he built a stone grist mill and a stone house for himself. The following year he had the area where he had his residence surveyed and laid out into lots. The present day Pottsville thus dates back to 1816 when a small portion of the present city was first laid out by John Pott, Sr.

Three years later when Thomas and Sarah arrived in Pottsville, there were not more than a dozen families living in the village itself. In fact one account says there were only six, while another states there were eight families. To reach Pottsville from Port Clinton in 1819 Thomas and Sarah, with their family of five young children, had to travel by wagon over a rough and unimproved road which ran through the Port Clinton Gap of the Blue Mountain with its great forests and along winding roads that followed the banks of the Schuylkill river. While the distance was not more than eighteen miles (fifteen by present day roads), the trip must have been a tiresome and difficult one.

Their first home in Pottsville was a two-story log house on what is now the corner of South Center Street and Howard Avenue. They presumably lived on the second floor, for it was in this log house that Thomas and his partner, John Pott, Jr., had their first store. This building was originally built by Henry Donnell, a surveyor who had laid out the town for John Pott, Sr. in 1816. Henry Donnell had built the house for himself and had also used it for a store.

Pottsville was still, in 1819, without a school or a religious meeting place. To remedy the situation, John Pott, Sr. gave the town a piece of land for a school and meeting place and a burial ground as well. Thomas, who was extremely interested

in the project, with two other men, actually cut the logs on the selected site, which were used for the construction of the building. In this first cemetery behind the old log school Thomas was to bury three of his children who died young and his wife, Sarah, who died in childbirth on December 28, 1828. The children of Thomas attended the old log school and meeting house, but the only teacher his oldest daughter Elizabeth could remember in later life was "a rough old Irishman."

In a comparatively short time Thomas moved his family to a better house on the same street, still near the old log school. His third home, described as a delightful stone house, at the corner of Centre and Mauch Streets, had been originally built by Benjamin Pott. The house which his daughter remembered best was their fourth home at the corner of Mahantongo and Second Streets, for it was in this house that Elizabeth was married on April 2, 1839.

Pottsville was truly a frontier town in the early 1820s. The roads at times were well nigh impassable even by the Conestogo wagons drawn by six to eight horses. According to Thomas' daughter, Elizabeth, as told to her granddaughter, Mrs. Frances K. Keiser, her first childhood memories were of giant trees and of bears howling up on the hill where the Schuylkill County Courthouse now stands, and of course she never forgot the pet bear cub which her father gave to her and her sister, Annette, nor the sad day it had to be given away and was sent to Philadelphia on a stage coach after it had gotten a little too rough and had pushed Annette into a nearby stream.

As late as 1829 panthers and bears were still seen on the road to Port Carbon. In late life Elizabeth still remembered the abundance of flowers and masses of rhododendron and laurel. In the early days the area beyond the Blue Mountain had been called St. Anthony's Wilderness, after Anthony Seifert, a Moravian missionary. There had also been early Indian massacres in the region, and in 1756 the Delaware Indians had destroyed a little settlement near the present town of Orwigsburg.

During the Revolution masts for sea-going vessels for the navies of France and the colonies had been cut in the nearby forests, and in 1780 soldiers had been sent to protect the wood cutters from the Indians. Indian raids continued until the latter days of the Revolution. The area with its fine forests of pine and hemlock had no doubt attracted Thomas because he was himself a lumber man. But Pottsville was never destined to become a lumber town. Even Thomas and his partner, John Pott, Jr., in their first log store in 1820 could not have visualized that their picturesque little village would soon become a boom town and an incorporated borough by 1828, for beneath the land and under the soil of the nearby hills and forests lay some of the richest anthracite coal veins in all north America.

The glowing reports which Thomas must have written his brothers in Berks County soon attracted them also to Pottsville. John, aged eighteen, came with Thomas in 1819. Samuel arrived in 1825 and James, Jr. in 1832. James had been elected sheriff of Berks County in 1829 and left soon after the completion of his term of office, having been succeeded by Henry Bowman who took office in 1832.

By 1833 the population had grown to upwards of twenty-five hundred inhabitants with the number of buildings being increased to 535 with numerous stores, two hotels, an Episcopal Church, and a bank. Thomas had been elected a director of this bank in 1832, which was later to become the Miners National Bank of Pottsville. He also served on the Borough Council in 1831-32. There were even two newspapers, a circulating library and a seminary. On January 11, 1825 Thomas had been officially appointed to serve as the first postmaster of the town, but after a term of six months he relinquished this position because of other interests. He already had opened his first coal vein which was but the beginning of a number of

successful collieries to be owned or operated by the Silliman brothers.

Clifton K. Yearly¹ pays high tribute to the Silliman brothers as veteran colliers and landholders and for their family association and success in the pooling of their experiences. He also adds the interesting sidelight that Benjamin Silliman (Professor of Chemistry and Geology at Yale University) made a journey through the anthracite coal fields in 1830 and suggested the possibility of other beds existing at greater depths. He again visited these workings in 1831 and it was his belief that "they were perhaps the most famous coal mines of the day."² Yearly also states that Thomas was not only one of the most prominent coal owners and merchants of his day but that he also aided and was involved in the operation of railroads and the Centre Turnpike Co. which opened thousands of acres to settlement.

In December 1828 Thomas had suffered the loss of his wife, Sarah, who died in childbirth. This child, James Theodore, was their eleventh offspring. Their other children were: James, who was born in 1808 and died prior to 1819; William, born on November 4, 1810; Charles, born in February, 1813; Elizabeth, born March 10, 1815, who was later to marry F. W. Hughes; Annette, born December 1, 1817, second wife of Decatur Nice; Susanah, born in 1819, first wife of Decatur Nice; Edmond, born April 18, 1821; Edward, born April 18, 1821 (twin brother of Edmond), died 1839; Albert, born November 20, 1823; Theodore, born 1825; and James Theodore, born December 28, 1828. Another son, George, had died in infancy.

After the death of Sarah Bowen in 1828, Thomas married on Oct. 12, 1830 Eliza Williams Ridgway, who was twelve years

¹ *Enterprise and Anthracite, Economics and Democracy in Schuylkill County, 1820-1875*, published (1961) by the John Hopkins Press.

² A family story which has been handed down relates that when Benjamin Silliman was in Pottsville, he called on Samuel and before he had given his name, Samuel said to him, "I don't know who you are but you are a Silliman."

younger than he. Their son, Henry Ridgway, was born on October 29, 1832. He became a well-known physician and served during the Civil War from May 28, 1861 until March 13, 1865, starting with the rank of a first lieutenant assistant surgeon and ending the war with the rank of captain. On November 8, 1866 Dr. Henry Ridgway Silliman married Catherine Buck. Catherine, who was born on February 21, 1838, died on December 26, 1878 and Henry R. Silliman died on January 1, 1883.

Their only son, Charles Silliman, was born in Philadelphia on August 1, 1868 and died in Norristown, Pa. on October 29, 1949. He attended the University of Pennsylvania and became a well-known engineer and draftsman, starting as a draftsman with the Pennsylvania Railroad. In 1888 he became the chief draftsman for the Norfolk and Western Railroad and later their assistant chief engineer. For many years he was a consulting engineer for the Committee of Railroad Presidents in the evaluation of the railroads east of the Mississippi River, with headquarters in Washington, D.C. He retired in 1934. At the time of his death in 1949 he was the oldest member of the Engineers' Club of Philadelphia. Charles and his wife, Mary Lee Silliman, had no children. Mary died on July 18, 1935. His second wife was Mary Rennyson, but they also had no children. Thus Charles was the last surviving descendant of his grandfather Thomas to bear the Silliman name.

His only sister, Harriet, born on October 30, 1869, married Chauncey M. Baugh on April 14, 1889. She died in Colorado Springs on July 6, 1894.

Thomas continued to play an important part in business and public affairs up to the time of his death on May 27, 1860. The Pottsville Weekly *Miners Journal*, in the June 9 issue, speaks of his death as a great loss to the community, for he was not only "one of the pioneers of this region" who had been identified with the rise and progress of the entire area, but he was also "respected by all classes of our citizens." The article ends with a final note of respect: "It is with sincere sorrow

that we note the passing away of a citizen, whom we honor and revere."

Five of the sons of Thomas and Sarah—James, Edmond, Edward, Theodore, and James T. died when they were quite young. Their three other sons, William, Charles, and Albert never married. Their only descendants are those who have descended from Thomas and Sarah Bowen's two daughters, Elizabeth Hughes and Susanah Nice, and from a granddaughter of Thomas and Eliza Ridgway, Harriet Baugh. The only direct descendants of Thomas and Sarah still living in Pottsville at the present time are Mrs. Frances Kaercher Keiser and her son, Edward K. Keiser and his family. Mrs. Keiser is the daughter of Annette Hughes Kaercher. Annette Hughes Kaercher was the daughter of Elizabeth Silliman Hughes, who was born March 10, 1815.

Annette's father, Francis W. Hughes, was born in 1817. He had been admitted to the Schuylkill County Bar at the age of twenty (the Judge failed to ask him his age) prior to his graduation from Dickinson College in 1838. In 1842 he became the Pottsville Borough Solicitor, and the next year he was elected to the State Senate and was the author in 1854 of the Pennsylvania Common School Act. He also served in 1851 as the Secretary of the Commonwealth of Pennsylvania and as the Attorney General. His large law practice extended even beyond the county and state. The other children of Elizabeth and Francis W. Hughes were Thomas S., born in 1839; Frances Elizabeth, born in 1841; and Lucy born in 1853.

Mrs. Frances Kaercher Keiser was seventeen years old when her grandmother, Elizabeth died. Her father, George R. Kaercher, had purchased from the other heirs the house of Elizabeth and Francis W. Hughes after the death of his father-in-law on October 23, 1885, but his mother-in-law continued to live with the Kaercher family until her death in 1903.

Mrs. Keiser deeply loved her grandmother and remembers her as a tiny little person with sparkling dark eyes and lovely snow white hair. For as far back as Mrs. Keiser can remem-

ber, her grandmother always wore a sheer white cap with fluted frill every day and a triangular tiny one for dress-up, with either a rosette of lavender or of black ribbon. Another fond memory of her grandmother is of her sitting in her little rocking chair with her Bible in her hand and her prayer book beside her in her regular quiet evening session of devotions and meditation.

Mrs. Keiser also vividly remembers the old house in which she and her brother, George H. Kaercher (1888-1949) had grown up and which became known as the Hughes-Kaercher property. The home had been built in 1855. It was surrounded by six acres of ground with beautiful old trees—oak, hickory, poplar, sugar maple, pine, and hemlock. There was an orchard of cherry, apple, pear, and peach trees. Mrs. Keiser especially remembers the box-bordered paths and old-fashioned flower beds and the red shale path that led up to the porch with box bushes on each side. There was a great willow close to the house and beech trees near the gate. There were early spring flowers in the garden beds—tulips, daffodils, hyacinths, crocuses, and star of Bethlehem in the early spring. Later purple and white althea bushes, old fashioned roses, bridal wreath, and shrub bushes all made their contribution. Her grandmother Elizabeth, who apparently had a “green thumb”, continued to work in the garden as long as she was able to do so. There were roses of every description, honeysuckles, trumpet vines, Dutchman’s Breeches, and climbing purple wisteria vines that went all the way up from one end of the porch to the third floor of their house. There was also a wrought-iron railing around the porch. Both the railing and the iron pillars were decorated with wrought-iron bunches of grapes and grapeleaves. Honeysuckle and trumpet vines twined in and out of the iron railing.

Mrs. Keiser, as told to the writer, will never forget the smell of the boxwood on a hot summer day nor the honeysuckle that attracted the hummingbirds. Nor can she forget the time her grandmother Elizabeth broke her arm and then sat for

days by her window watching a Baltimore oriole build its nest in a willow tree outside her window. Another picture of her grandmother is that of her sitting in her favorite little rocking chair mending the family stockings—long, back cotton ribbed ones for the women and even for the little girls.

Mrs. Keiser's mother, Annette Hughes Kaercher, also loved this garden and her flowers. When she died on May 15, 1933 at the age of eighty-three, her obituary account in the *Pottsville Republican* speaks of her many "benefactions," of her church work as an "enthusiastic" member of the Trinity Episcopal Church, and of her love for flowers. She "took a great delight in being in the garden where she always had a collection of the most beautiful blossoms. From the earliest spring until the winter, the garden at their old spacious home was always in bloom, and it was Mrs. Kaercher's great pleasure to have her friends visit her home and garden and enjoy it."

Annette Hughes Kaercher had indeed been active in church work. She had taught Sunday School classes for many years and had served as the President of the Dorcas Society. She had played an active part in the Women's Auxiliary of her church. She was also at one time the President of the Pottsville Mission Board; a member of the Board of the Pottsville Children's Home and Benevolent Association; a member of the Ruskin Club and Schuylkill Students Shakespeare Society, the oldest Woman's Club in the Pennsylvania State Federation founded in 1874.

George R. Kaercher, husband of Annette Hughes and father of Frances Keiser, was born on November 1, 1845 and died on September 19, 1890. He was a descendant of John Martin Kaercher, one of the pioneer settlers in Berks County. The family had at one time owned most of the Hamburg area, having received their original land grant from the Penn heirs. Hamburg, originally known as Kaerchertown, was laid out by the Kaercher family. The grandfather of George, Daniel Kaercher, had settled in Pottsville in 1828. George R. was an early graduate of the Pottsville High School and attended Lafayette

College in Easton, Pa. in the early 1860's winning the Fowler Prize in English Literature with his essay on *Pilgrims Progress*. He later became a prominent lawyer and General Counsel for the Reading Company which at that time included the Reading Railroad and all the coal lands of the company. He was the District Attorney for Schuylkill County at the time of the famous Molly Maguire trials.

Mrs. Frances Kaercher Keiser was only four years old at the time of her father's death in 1890. Her mother, Annette Hughes Kaercher, and her grandmother Elizabeth, until her death in 1903, continued to live in the old Hughes-Kaercher home until after the marriage of Annette Kaercher's daughter Frances in 1920. The property was sold in 1923. The Good Samaritan Hospital now occupies the site.

Frances Kaercher was married to George M. Keiser in the parlor of the old Hughes-Kaercher home on July 20, 1920. George M. Keiser was born in Scranton, Pa. on December 19, 1879 and died in Pottsville on May 25, 1924, only four years after their marriage, leaving the young widow with two small sons to raise—George M. Keiser and Edward Keiser. The father and husband was, at the time of his death, a promising young engineer and businessman. He had been a superintendent of the Pine Hill Colliery and later the owner of the Ellsworth and Gardner Collieries. During World War 1, besides the pressure to produce as much coal as possible, he also served on the District Draft Review board. He was a Director of the Mill Creek Coal Company and first president of the Pennsylvania State Board of Mine Inspectors. He was also a Director of the Safe Deposit Bank.

George M. Keiser, Jr., the oldest son of George M. and Frances Kaercher Keiser, was born on October 23, 1924. He was educated in the Pottsville Public Schools and in Haverford, Pennsylvania. He enlisted in the Army Air Force in 1942 and served as a B-24 Flight Engineer and top turret gunner. After the war he entered the U.S. Forest Service and is presently located in Burlington, Vermont, engaged in

research work for the U.S. Forest Service. In 1945 he married Edith Nye Griffith and they have two children: George M. III, born in 1950; and Katherine Annette, born in 1958.

Edward Kaercher Keiser, the second son of George M. and Frances Keiser, was born on October 23, 1924. He was a senior in the Pottsville High School in 1943 when he enlisted in the U.S. Navy Engineering Corps and was sent to England in late 1943. Most of his duty was with the 81st Battalion Seabees. He landed on Utah Beach, Normandy on the morning of June 6, 1944, the first day of the invasion. In November 1945 he was sent to Trinidad and was mustered out in February 1946. He took a refresher course at Penn State Undergraduate Center but left college to take up Life Insurance work. Later he entered the coal business.

Edward married Elsie T. Ryon in 1945, and they have four children: Carolyn, born in 1946; Edward Kaercher, Jr., born in 1949; Bruce Ryon, born in 1950; and Peter Ryon, born in 1953. At the present time he is the superintendent of the new St. Nicholers Breaker of the Reading Anthracite Company in Pottsville. It is the largest anthracite breaker in the world. Their coal is sold abroad as well as in the United States. It is interesting to note that some of the coal put through this tremendous breaker comes from some of the original Silliman holdings which they mined nearly one hundred and fifty years ago.

Mrs. Frances Keiser not only continues to live in Pottsville, but she is still active in church and community affairs. She is a member of the Women's Auxiliary of the Trinity Episcopal Church, and Treasurer and Board member at the present time of the Pottsville Interracial Council. She continues her interest in the Pottsville Mission Settlement House, having served for many years as a member of their Board of Directors. Furthermore she is a member of the Schuylkill Shakespeare Society, having been a member of this group since 1911. She is truly a remarkable woman and a worthy descendant of Thomas and his wife, Sarah Bowen, and of her beloved grandmother, Elizabeth Silliman Hughes.

3. James Jr. and Mary Schotz

James, Jr. son of James and Susanah was born in Hamburg, Pa. on July 25, 1792. His wife, Mary Schotz, was born on Dec. 12, 1796. The young couple were married in 1813 and were living in 1820 in Upper Bern Township, Berks County. At this time their family consisted of two sons and three daughters all under ten years of age. Like his brother Thomas, James had served for a few months during the War of 1812.

In 1829 he was elected sheriff of Berks County but before his first term of office was over, he decided to join his brothers Thomas, John, and Samuel in Pottsville. Thus in 1832, immediately after the expiration of his term of office, he moved his family to the growing town of Pottsville where he spent the rest of his life. From 1832 until his death in 1870, or over a period of thirty-eight years, he was to play an important part in the civic and political life of the town.

He was at first associated with his brother Samuel in the mercantile business, and finally he succeeded Samuel in managing their store in what was called the Old Stone building. He was later extensively engaged in mining coal, first at Bear Ridge whose original vein had been first opened by his brother Thomas. He continued to manage this mine until shortly before his death. In 1861 he and his son, Edward, erected another large colliery in the Mahanoy basin.

His financial success enabled him to build one of the most beautiful homes in the city located on the west side of Center Street, a house which for years after his death was still known as the "James Sillyman Mansion." It was located in the heart of the city on the site now occupied by the new modern Sears Roebuck Store.

James was also active in church affairs being a member of the vestry of the Trinity Episcopal Church from 1839 to 1852. He contributed generously to the building of the present church erected in 1847. The procession for the ceremony of the laying of the corner stone of this church formed at his home on Center Street just a few hundred feet from the church site.

During the Civil War he contributed freely to the war effort. A newspaper clipping¹ (date and name of paper not shown) praises him in these words, "No man during the long years when the fate of the nation seemed to hang by a thread, and the hosts of treason were aiming at the life of the Republic, felt or evinced a keener interest in the deadly contest, and few gave more to aid the Government in its struggle for existence. His means were freely at the disposal of the country's service."

His greatest sacrifice was his own son, James, who was among the first "defenders" from Pottsville. He had risen during his four years of service from a private to the rank of a captain. He was still single and thirty-two years old at the time of his death on July 31, 1865.

James was greatly concerned about his country in the days that followed the war and was especially disturbed by the graft and corruption that characterized that period. In an account written after his death the unknown writer states that James "severely and justly denounced these corruptions and degeneracies."

By 1870 James had been a widower for nearly eleven years, his wife Mary having died on June 16, 1859. He never remarried, but he had no need of a housekeeper since his four unmarried daughters, Mary, Sarah, Amanda, and Ellen continued to live with him in the old family home.

James himself died on Feb. 13, 1870. A newspaper account under the heading, "Death of James Silliman, Esq." began as follows: "It becomes our painful duty to announce to our readers the death of the well-known citizen, whose name heads this article. Probably no one family in this county has done more than the one with which Mr. Silliman was connected to develop the resources of the county in all that pertains to its material prosperity." After a rather lengthy biographical sketch

¹ Name of paper and date not shown on clipping, but it was without doubt from a Pottsville paper. This account and others that will be cited in the following pages, without reference to the names of the paper, were cut out by one of the daughters of James and inserted in their father's Bible.

this account pays special tribute to James' high standards and personal integrity. "Mr. Silliman was a man of stern and unbending integrity. Literally his word was as good as his bond. Exact and careful in all the relations of life, he at once imparted credit and solidity to whatever business he engaged in. He was one who looked upon integrity and ability as the first requirements of our public men. . . . Full of years, surrounded by an affectionate circle of friends, enjoying the esteem of his fellow citizens, he has passed away, leaving to us a name which should ever be honored and remembered."

Another account pays similar tribute to his contribution and help "in developing the resources of this rich mineral region and placing it in the foremost rank of the (coal) producing counties of Pennsylvania." The account ends with a single but enviable tribute: "Truly, a good man has gone to his reward."

James was buried in the Charles Baber Cemetery in Pottsville near the grave of his son, Captain James Silliman, who had died in 1865.

James Jr. and Mary were the parents of eleven children as shown by records from James' own Bible which is still in the possession of one of his descendants. Their names and dates (copied exactly as written) of birth are as follows:

Eliza, born 28th day of October A.D. 1814
Alexander, born 7th day of February A.D. 1816
Mary, born 3rd day of February A.D. 1818
Sarah Susanah, born 22nd day of March A.D. 1819
Edward, born June 20th A.D. 1820
Amanda, born 20th day of January A.D. 1824
Morgan, born March 22nd A.D. 1828
Ellen, born 3rd May 1831
James, born 7th February 1833
Matilda, born 5th February 1835
Phebe Ann, born in May 1842 died in April 1843

A. Alexander Silliman

Alexander, the eldest son of James Jr., was born on February 7, 1816 and died in 1900. He was living in Philadelphia in January 1880 at the time of the death of his sister Matilda and continued to live in this city until his death in 1900. He had been a substantial merchant and coal producer and partner of Fred Patterson. On April 14, 1844 he married Maria Pott. They had two children, a son Frank P. (born May 27, 1845; died Mar. 17, 1876) and a daughter, Annie, who died in 1873. Frank P. married Estelie Day and their son, Alfred Silliman, married Ada Inness. Alfred and Ada were living in Philadelphia in 1904.

B. Edward Schotz Silliman

Edward, son of James Jr. and Mary Schotz, was born in Bern township on June 20, 1820.

In a two-volume *History of Schuylkill County* he is called "without question" the foremost citizen of Mahanoy City and "his name merits a place of lasting distinction" (Vol. II, p. 449). He had come to Mahanoy City at the outbreak of the Civil War to engage in coal mining and had become one of the pioneer operators in the area.

In 1861 he sank his first shaft and built the first coal breaker in the Mahanoy valley. On Jan. 14, 1862 the first shipment of coal was made from this new breaker. At this time the company had 350 workers on its payroll. After operating the colliery for about eight years, he and his father, James Jr., disposed of their interests in this mine. Edward then built an iron furnace at New Ringgold. Later he became the operator of an extensive mine at Houtzdate, and still later he acquired a tract of 1600 acres of valuable coal land near Shepp-ton.

In 1864 he helped organize the 1st National Bank of Mahanoy City, becoming its president in 1866, a position he continued to hold until his death in 1904. Likewise he organized the Mahanoy City Water Company of which he was also president

until his death. Other companies in which he was the principal incorporator and president were the Mahanoy City Electric Light, Heat and Power Company and the Mahanoy City Gas Company. During the Civil War he organized a group of guards known at first as the Silliman Guards which later became Co. E of the Penna. National Guards, 8th Regt.

Like his father his "Integrity and strength of character" enabled him to maintain "an inviolable hold upon the confidence and goodwill of his fellow men." It was said of him that he "found pleasure in forwarding enterprises for the general good—a man unostentatious and kindly, easy to approach, generous and tolerant—his influence and helpfulness permeated the life and being of (his) city and county commanding the respect and confidence of all classes of people."

In 1858 Edward S. was married to Sarah Keller. Their sons, Edward S. Jr. and James Keller Silliman, were to carry on the family interests of their father. A third son, Charles K., married Edith Turnbach.

Edward Schotz Silliman Jr., the oldest son of Edward S. was born in Mahanoy City on Nov. 4, 1864. Following in the footsteps of his father, he served an apprenticeship with the electric light and water companies later succeeding his father as the President of both these companies as well as the President of the 1st National Bank. Furthermore like his father and grandfather, he served as a vestryman of the Episcopal Church, and it has been written of him that he "assists and encourages every good cause." He was a member of various city clubs, a prominent Republican and a member of the Union Republican Club of Philadelphia, as well as a member of the Manufacturers' Club of Philadelphia.

His first wife, Elizabeth, by whom he had no children, died in 1897. On December 7, 1905 he married Mabel S. Beck. Their children were: Mary B., born Sept. 1906; Elizabeth Sarah, born in 1908, died 1911; Edward S. III, born in 1912 and died four years later; and Jane, who married John Bray Minchoff. Their daughter, Mary Silliman Svender lives in Barnsville, Pa.

James Keller Silliman, the second son of Edward Schotz, was born in Mahanoy City on March 29, 1869. His business connections were principally with institutions established by his father, Edward S. He started as a clerk in the First National Bank then later became a teller. After his resignation from this position he continued to serve the bank as a director. He was also a principal stockholder in the Mahanoy City Water Co. He married Catherine Morscher.

Their home has been described as a beautiful one. James K. and Catherine had three children: Florence, Edward and Kathryn. James K. died on June 26, 1914. He has been described as a man "who made a deep impression upon all with whom he came in contact—sincere, straightforward and devoid of pretense; helpful with others; ideal in his family life."

C. Morgan Silliman

Morgan, the seventh child and third son of James Jr. and Mary Schotz, was born in Berks County on March 22, 1828. He grew up in Pottsville where he was educated in the public schools. In 1861 he and William McKee formed a partnership and operated the Harleigh Colliery, one of the best mines in the Lehigh area. In 1876 he sold out his interests in this mine and moved to Hazleton, where he became the senior member of the mercantile firm of Silliman and Faith. He was one of the incorporators of the Diamond Water Works Company and was also associated for a number of years with the Hazleton Gas Company.

He was a devout Episcopalian and one of the founders of St. Peter's Church in Hazleton. There is still a tablet in this church in his honor and memory.

He was married in Pottsville on August 6, 1855 to Martha Levy. Their large home on North Church Street in Hazleton was located on the present site of the Public Library.

Morgan died unexpectedly on Nov. 14, 1899. A newspaper account of his death reveals that while advanced in years, only the day before his death he had been downtown, apparently in

his usual good health. The article speaks of him as an old time anthracite coal operator when the mining industry was marked by its most prosperous days. It further mentions his liberality and generosity which were never appealed to in vain.

Morgan and Martha were the parents of three daughters: Jennie (1856-1938) who married William Roberts; Mary, who married John Price; and Bessie (1863-1932) who married James Cole. A grandson of Jennie Roberts, Thomas H. Brew Jr., still lives in Hazleton, his daughter, Bonnie Brew, served in the Philippines with the Peace Corps from 1963 to June 1965. A daughter of Bessie and James Cole, Martha Cole Heller had three sons, James, Frederick and Morgan. James B. Heller and Frederick K. Heller, B.S.S. live in Pottsville. Their brother Morgan Silliman Heller, Ph.D., is a professor of Chemistry at Albright College.

D. Amanda

James' four unmarried daughters, Mary, Sarah Susanah, Amanda, and Ellen continued to live after the death of their father in 1870 in the old family home until the death of Mary and Sarah in 1903 and that of Amanda in 1904. Mrs. Frances K. Keiser, who is still living in Pottsville, has vivid memories of three of these first cousins of her own grandmother, Elizabeth Silliman Hughes. It was in their home that Mrs. Keiser, a girl in her early teens, copied a page from the Bible of James, material which sixty years later were to prove extremely valuable to the writer. The finding of this original Bible in 1964 not only added considerable new information about the family, but also confirms the amazing accuracy of the teen-age girl who first copied a portion of these records.

Mrs. Keiser, as told to the writer in her own home in Pottsville in 1964, especially remembers her third cousin "Big" Amanda. She was called "Big" Amanda to distinguish her from her neighbor and first cousin "Little" Amanda, daughter of Samuel. "Big" Amanda has been described as "tall and majestic" and an "excellent executive." She was active in church affairs, treasurer of the Dorcas Society, giving to them some bank

stock, the interest of which the society still enjoys. She also left five thousand dollars in her will to be used by her church in supplementing the Rector's salary.

Her sister, Mary, has been described as a person who was "extremely kind" and of a "charitable disposition" who "secretly performed many acts of philanthropy."

Amanda died on May 24, 1904 at the age of eighty-one. She was the last surviving child of her parents, James Jr. and Mary Silliman.

Her oldest sister, Eliza, wife of Alexander Henderson, had died in Sept. 1880. Her sister, Ellen, had died on Jan. 3, 1896; Matilda had died in January 1800; Mary had died on May 19, 1903; and Sarah Susanah on Nov. 27, 1903. Her brother, Edward Schotz, had died in Mahanoy City on May 1, 1904 just twenty-three days previous to her own death.

An account of the death of Amanda in a leading Pottsville paper reveals that her loss would be felt by the entire community.

"This Community was again shocked today to hear of still another death in the Silliman family, this time being that of the late Miss Amanda Silliman, one of the oldest and most respected residents of Pottsville. . . ."

4. Samuel and Margaret Shelly

Samuel, the fourth son of James and Susanah, was born in Hamburg, Berks County, on September 26, 1797. He started working early in life, having left school when very young, to learn the trade of a mill-wright. Later he served for a short time as an apprentice journeyman, then worked as a clerk and bookkeeper in a store until he decided to join his brother, Thomas, who then owned a store of his own in Pottsville. When Samuel arrived in Pottsville in 1824, he was still unmarried and had little capital of his own.

At first Samuel was engaged in the mercantile business, in partnership with his brother Thomas, but from 1839 all his main energies were devoted to the coal business. He started

several profitable ventures, later becoming the owner or part-owner of several of the best-paying mines in the Schuylkill district.

By 1856, according to Yearly (*Enterprise and Anthracite*, p. 16) he had become a "veteran collier and landholder." He was particularly interested in the Rainbow Collieries which he personally managed and which were known as one of seven separate Sillyman Collieries in the area. The Rainbow Collieries were situated in Little Wolf Creek, about three miles north of Port Carbon. These mines were to become, under Samuel's management, exceedingly profitable. One vein, 21 ft. in thickness, was approached by three openings.

Outside interests, however, were threatening to break up the monopoly which the Silliman family and other producers in the area enjoyed. According to Yearly, Samuel was the leader in 1856 of an organization to regulate and protect their interests against the Scranton interests, suspected of trying to break into Schuylkill marketing.

Samuel was able to acquire considerable land at one time or another. One record, as early as 1830, shows that he sold a tract of land in Shamokin Township. In 1840, according to an article about him in a History of Schuylkill Co. (published by W. W. Nunsell & Co. in 1881), Samuel purchased the original building of the first hotel built in Pottsville in 1818 and added a brick front to it. This same article credits him for his part ("under his superintendence") in the erection of the Town Hall; for having been a member of the Building Committee for the construction of the Schuylkill County Courthouse, and for the building of several of the largest hotels, a number of stores, offices, and private residences erected through his encouragement. This help may have been given privately or as a city official. Yearly (p. 41) states that Samuel served at various times as Chief Burgess or as a Borough officer. Another article about him in a Biographical Encyclopaedia of Pennsylvania (pub. in Phila. in 1874) confirms the above-stated facts, but adds that he had been connected with the

building of three of the largest hotels in the town, that he had been instrumental in moving the county seat to Pottsville, and that he had been a large contributor in the erection of the new Court House. Samuel is also credited with having been the first president of the Pottsville Gas Company. The account further states that "his character, founded upon the basis of strict integrity, was a compound of energy, perseverance, enthusiasm, and large benevolence."

One of the most impressive land marks of the city of Pottsville, even to this day, is the tall Henry Clay monument that dominates the city from many directions. In a way it is a monument to Samuel as well, for it was clearly under his leadership that the monument was erected in 1850 in gratitude to Henry Clay for his work in protecting the iron industry and incidentally the Sillyman coal needed in the iron furnaces. Samuel personally contributed three thousand dollars to the project.

One of his descendants, Mrs. Frances Lindsay Ralston, still has in her possession a large Sheffield silver tray inscribed: "Presented by the citizens of the Borough of Pottsville to their esteemed fellow townsman, Samuel Sillyman, Esq. a tribute of their regard for his valuable public services in the erection of the Pottsville Courthouse, Gas Works, Clay Monument, and Water Works, May 1, 1855." This tray was given to him at a public dinner just four years previous to his death, which occurred on October 18, 1859.

An obituary account in the Pottsville Miners' Journal dated Oct. 22, 1859 speaks of him as a greatly esteemed and public-spirited citizen. The point is stressed that he started his life as a poor boy who eventually fought his way up by energy and industry to wealth and influence. This account also states that a feature of his character, which rendered him exceedingly popular, was his generosity. The man who applied to him for assistance was sure to receive it, and not grudgingly, but accompanied by words of comfort and encouragement. His funeral was "the largest in this county. During the passage of the cortege all our places of business were closed and the bells of the churches and

the court house were tolled."

Samuel's wife, Margaret Shelly, who was 13 years younger than himself, did not die until 1882. Samuel and Margaret had ten children:

Alexander Shelly, born 1829; died 1872

Amanda, born 1831; d. 1882

Rebecca, born 1832; d. 1870

Susan Jane, born 1835; d. 1924

Thomas Henderson, born 1837; moved to Nevada

Elizabeth, born 1840; d. 1916

George F., born Jan. 29, 1845; d. Nov. 25, 1920

Joseph S., born May 5, 1847; d. June 8, 1924

Samuel, born Oct. 8, 1849; d. 1914

Frances, born Apr. 3, 1852; d. in Calif. Mar. 29, 1925
wife of Tilghman Johnston

Most of the above never married or did not have male heirs. Thomas H, who like his cousin James was a Civil War captain, married Elizabeth Gates. They had two sons—Thomas Garfield, born in Nevada on Nov. 25, 1880, and Samuel, who died at the age of 21; and four daughters. Thomas Garfield had two sons—Floyd, born Feb. 22, 1920 and Earl, born Feb. 27, 1924, who was last known to be living in Nevada and in Kings City, Calif. In August, 1953 Thomas Garfield was still living in Ely, Nevada, as were three of his sisters, with large families of their own.

George F. married Mary Frances Bowman, and their son, Walter, was the father of two daughters, Dorothea and Mary.

Samuel, who married Jane Wren, had a son, Thomas, who married Laura Kline. They had a daughter, Frances, but no sons.

Thus the living descendants of Samuel and Margaret are mainly the offsprings of their daughter, Frances Johnston, and of grand and great-granddaughters.

5. John, and Margaret Bobb

John, the youngest son of James and Susanah Hughes, was born in Hamburg, Berks Co. on Feb 2, 1801 and died in Pottsville in 1883. He arrived in Pottsville in 1819 together with his eldest brother, Thomas. At first he was engaged in helping his brother in his store and later, like all his brothers, he became extensively engaged in coal mining. One account (*Bell, History of Northumberland Co.*) states that he was one of the first to ship coal to Philadelphia by raft, thus helping to develop the coal interests. It is also stated that he was one of the most successful coal producers in the Pottsville area, having been a superintendent of Collieries for many years. Furthermore he was associated with his brothers in the building of a portion of the original turnpike that ran from Reading to Sunbury.

John was married to Margaret Antrim Bobb, daughter of Conard and Katherine Antrim Bobb. In time their family was to consist of five sons and five daughters. Their sons were: Lewis T.; Oscar H.; James S.; Conard B.; and John H. Their daughters, about whom almost nothing is known, were: Emma; Margaret; Elizabeth, who married Perry Hoffman; Ada, who married Thomas B. Innes; and Phoebe.

A. Oscar H. Silliman

Oscar H. Silliman was born in Pottsville on Jan. 26, 1831. In order that he might be trained for a superintendency, he began his business life as a boy working in the mines owned or managed by his father or uncles. However, coal mining did not appeal to him, and in 1847 he became a clerk in a general store. In 1853 he went into business for himself. In 1865 he moved to Locust Gap and in 1868, to Mount Carmel in Northumberland Co., where he was still engaged in merchandising. It is also known that he took a deep interest in the public schools and that he was a prominent Mason and an ardent Republican.

Oscar died in Northumberland county on May 29, 1898.

His first wife Elizabeth Erwin was born in 1832 and died in August 1857. Three of their children; Irene, William and Maude died quite young. Their daughter Carrie E. Silliman, born April 6, 1856, married R. V. Montelius and resided in Mount Carmel. Their daughter, Katherine Montelius married Channing P. Derr. Mrs. Derr is still living in Easton, Penna.

B. Conard B. Silliman

Conard B. Silliman, son of John and Margaret, was born June 6, 1837, and died on March 27, 1892. During his early life he was engaged in mining but later and until his death, he devoted his time entirely to the insurance business. His wife, Mary Van Horn, was born in 1841 and died in 1921. Conard and Mary had four children: John Hiram, born in Pottsville in 1858 and died on Sept. 25, 1926; James S., who may have died at an early age; Emilia, whose married name was Hicks; and Conard B., Jr.

Conard B., Jr. was born on July 13, 1873 and died on September 28, 1940. In 1900 he married Minnie Heebner. He attended the Pottsville public schools and began his business career in his father's insurance office which he greatly expanded into a lucrative business of his own after his father's death. He was a member of the First Presbyterian Church of Pottsville and upon his death it was stated that "he was one of the most public-spirited and enterprising citizens of Pottsville." His only heir was his wife, who continued to live in Pottsville until her death on June 17, 1945.

John Hiram and his wife, Margaret E. Boyer Silliman, had three sons: Guy Franklin, born in Pottsville on Dec. 21, 1883 and died on Dec. 5, 1949; Henry Clay, born in Wilkes Barre on Dec. 2, 1888 and died on July 28, 1947; and Lynn Hiram, who was injured in combat in World War I.

Guy Franklin Silliman had only one son, John Victor, who was born in Columbus, Ohio on June 9, 1915. He now (1965) lives in Cranford, N. J. His children are: John W. born July 11, 1945; and Donald W., born Aug. 7, 1948.

Henry Clay, brother of Guy Franklin, also had only one

son, Richard Charles, who was born in Cleveland, Ohio, on Nov. 22, 1910 and is presently living in Northridge, California. His only son, Richard Donald, born August 23, 1936 is a graduate of the University of Southern California School of Law and a lieutenant (reserve officer) in the United States Navy.

C. John H. Silliman

John H. Silliman was born in 1847 and died in March, 1941 at the age of 94. He was one of the county's last surviving Civil War veterans. For years he served as a trainmaster on the Shamokin division of the Reading Company with headquarters at Mahanoy Plane and Tamaqua.

He married Hannah Rhoads, the daughter of Andrew Jackson Rhoads. Hannah was born in Port Carbon and died in Tamaqua in August, 1946, at the age of 94. She had been a resident of Tamaqua for over 60 years. She was a devout member, as was her husband, of the First Presbyterian Church of Tamaqua. She was survived by her only son, Harry I. Silliman of Pottsville.

(1) Harry Innes Silliman

Harry Innes was born in Mahanoy Plane on Dec. 15, 1876. He was educated in the Tamaqua public schools. At the age of 15, he began working in a printing establishment in Tamaqua and was foreman of the shop a year later.

He established the *Tamaqua Herald* at 19, closing it to volunteer in Company B, 8th Penna. Volunteer Infantry, when the Spanish-American War began. At the end of his military service he became the associate editor of the *Tamaqua Evening Courier*.

In 1909 he became the editor and principal owner of the *Miner's Journal* which later became the *Pottsville Journal*. He was married on May 10, 1913 to Argenta Fay Jones of Pottsville. Harry I. Silliman was an excellent writer, and one of his short stories was published in an issue of the *Saturday Evening Post*. For years he was a correspondent for the *New York Sun* and various Philadelphia newspapers. His editorials

in the *Journal* were widely quoted in Eastern Pennsylvania.

He was a militant Republican and an active party leader. He held a life long interest in hospitals, being one of the founders of the Coaldale Hospital.

He was also a member of the United Spanish War Veterans and a member of the City Planning Commission. He was active in the affairs of the Children's Home and the Y.M.C.A. He served the latter as the President of their Board of Directors for a number of years and was an honorary director at the time of his death.

He was a member of the Pottsville Second Presbyterian Church. He was also a Rotarian, a member of the State Editorial Association, the Schuylkill Co. Historical Society, and a Knight of Malta.

He was also prominent in business affairs, having served as a director of the Merchants National Bank of Pottsville; the Eastern Pa. Light, Heat and Power Co., and the New City Building and Loan Association.

The day following his death on March 27, 1950, the *Pottsville Journal* carried a special tribute to him entitled, "Our Tribute to the Boss." It began with these words:

"It is with heavy heart that we in **The Journal** family are carrying on since 'the boss' and our friend died yesterday. Kindliness was one of his greatest virtues and nobody knew that better than his own employees.

"H. I. Silliman, who owned and operated **The Journal** for more than forty years, was no ordinary 'boss' to us. He remembered us in our joys and sorrows. If we needed a helping hand, he gave it. He was sympathetic and understanding. Many of his employees have long service records under his leadership, ample proof that he had the loyal support of his staff. That's why we considered him 'extra special.'"

After a long summary of his various contributions to the city and of his keen interest in the highest type of journalism, the above article concludes:

". . . Loyalty to his employees and friends was one of his finest tributes.

"Mr. Silliman was a credit to the newspaper profession.

He was a great editor; a fine family man; a gentleman; a champion of the people and a defender of the American way of life and the principles of our founding fathers.

"He never sought public office or the spotlight. His newspaper came first. And so he inspired his staff and won our everlasting admiration and esteem.

"This, then, is our tribute to 'the boss' as we affectionately called him."

His wife, Argenta Jones Silliman, is still living in Pottsville. Having no children of their own, she and her husband had an adopted daughter, Edna Kathryn.

Squire Thomas

1713-1810

John
b. May 21, 1751

Samuel
1776-1859

John

Robert

Samuel Jr.

James P.

Elizabeth

Samuel P.

William S.

Frank B.

Robert H.

Catherine

Belle E.

Robert G.

John L.

Samuel O.

Frank Jr.

Robert B.

John R.

Frank P.

CHAPTER V

SAMUEL AND ELIZABETH

1. From the Forks of the Delaware to the Forks of the Ohio.

Samuel Silliman was born in Forks township, Northampton County in 1776. He was the son of John Silliman and his grandfather, Squire Thomas, had been a member of the Northampton County, Pennsylvania Committee of Correspondence in 1775 and 1776 and one of the judges of the first Court of Justice for Northampton County which met in Easton, Pa. on June 17, 1777.¹ In 1810 Samuel was living with his parents in Lancaster County. He was married in late 1811 or early 1812, and his wife Elizabeth was sixteen years younger than he. Elizabeth was only nineteen at the time of her marriage. Samuel and Elizabeth were the parents of the following children:

1. John, born in Lancaster County, January, 28, 1813
2. Robert, born in Lancaster County; died in Texas in 1891
3. Nancy, married John Woods
4. Samuel, born in Lancaster County, November 29, 1819
5. James P., born in Lancaster County, April 5, 1822
6. Elizabeth, born in 1825

In 1814 Samuel and Elizabeth were living in Strassburg township. A deed recorded on Aug. 10, 1814, shows that Samuel had purchased, (on April 9th.) 68 1/2 acres of land from Henry Brenneman and wife, Ann, "also of Strassburg township."

While it is definitely known that Samuel and Elizabeth moved to the Pittsburgh area in 1825, the first authentic record that would pinpoint their place of residence is a land deed dated 1827, recorded in 1828, showing that Samuel Silliman pur-

¹ See Chap. III.

chased from J. Wray a ninety-acre farm in Ross township now part of north Pittsburgh. It was on this farm where his children were raised, his youngest son James being only five years old when the family settled there. It was a good investment and as the original Pittsburgh area at the forks of the Ohio and Allegheny City began to spread out, Samuel decided to divide his farm into lots, the subdivision becoming known as Sillimansville. A "Plan of this Subdivision" is still in existence. Several of these lots were given to each of Samuel's children or were jointly owned by them. A deed recorded in 1849 shows that "Samuel Silliman and Elizabeth his wife, John Silliman and Nancy his wife, Robert Silliman and Mary A., his wife, Samuel Silliman, Jr., and Catherine his wife. . . sold to Adam and Louis Reineman property in the City of Allegheny."

Elizabeth, wife of Samuel Sr. died on August 18, 1856 at the age of sixty-four. In the meantime, Samuel's two oldest sons, John and Robert, had moved to New Waterford, Columbiana County, Ohio. After the death of his wife Elizabeth in 1856, Samuel Sr. moved to New Waterford where he died at the home of his son John on May 24, 1859 at the age of eighty-three. His Will, dated September 21, 1857, is recorded in Allegheny County, and the settlement of his estate shows that he still owned considerable property in the Pittsburgh area as well as a house and lot in the town of New Waterford. The heirs named in his will of 1857, probated at New Lisbon, Ohio on October 29, 1860, were his six children: John who lived at New Waterford; Robert living in Texas; Nancy, wife of John Woods, Racine, Meigs County, Ohio; Samuel, Jr. now at Racine, Meigs County, Ohio; James of Racine, Meigs County, Ohio; and Elizabeth, wife of Thomas Chess of Dixmont, Allegheny County, Pa. All of his children were given lots which he still owned from his farm subdivision in Ross township. His grandson and namesake, Samuel Silliman, son of John, was to have his house and lot in New Waterford on condition that he pay his brother William two hundred dollars in "six years after my decease." In addition to this sum William was to have "one lot on the Unity Road." The executors of his estate were his

son John and his son-in-law Thomas Chess.

2. John and Nancy Stevenson

John, the oldest child of Samuel and Elizabeth Silliman, was born in Lancaster County, Pa., on January 28, 1813. He was named after his grandfather. When twelve years of age his parents left Lancaster County. In 1842 he was married to Nancy S. Stevenson who was born in Pittsburgh in March 1821. They continued to live in Pittsburgh until 1851 when John and his brother Robert moved to Columbiana County, Ohio, to an area known as Bull Creek. These two brothers laid out the town of New Waterford. They were likewise instrumental in establishing the first Presbyterian church in the area. John also was the owner of the first store in the town.¹ In time he became quite a successful merchant.

In 1869 he moved to Blainstown, Iowa, where he again became engaged in the mercantile business. He was an active member of the Blainstown Presbyterian Church of which he was a deacon and trustee at the time of his death on August 19, 1879. A newspaper account states that his funeral "was attended by the largest concourse of people ever assembled in Blainstown on a similar occasion."

His wife Nancy died in Cleveland on May 20, 1900. Both Nancy and John are buried in the Allegheny Cemetery in Pittsburgh. John and Nancy had two sons, Samuel P. and William S., and two daughters, Elizabeth and Anna Mary.

Elizabeth Silliman was born in Iowa on April 4, 1848. She married Rev. John Wilson on November 22, 1869, and they had one daughter, Nancy Wilson Doutiel, born February 12, 1871, who lived and died in Cleveland, Ohio.

Anna Mary Silliman was born in Iowa on May 3, 1856. She was married to P. H. Dunlap on June 25, 1874 and they lived in California. They had two sons, Edwin L. Dunlap, born Aug. 14, 1875 and Arthur S. Dunlap, born on February 17, 1882.

¹ McCord's *History of Columbiana County, Ohio*.

A. Samuel P. Silliman

Samuel, the older son of John and Nancy, was born in Pittsburgh on August 20, 1843. He received his education in Pittsburgh. In 1859 at the age of sixteen, he became a clerk in his father's store in New Waterford. In 1870 he moved to Benton County, Iowa where he served as cashier of the Benton County Bank for eight years. In 1880 he moved to Shelby, Iowa, where he was a bookkeeper in the mercantile house of W. F. Cleveland for four years. On January 1, 1889 he accepted the appointment of Deputy Clerk of Courts of Shelby County. He was a thoroughly accurate businessman and an expert accountant. In 1891 he moved to Perry, Iowa where he was engaged in the hotel business up until the time of his death on February 28, 1898.

Samuel was married in September 1875 to Sue Goff. Their only son, Robert Goff, was born in Iowa on May 19, 1877 and died in Easton, Pa. in 1929. He was survived by his wife and two sons.

B. William S. Silliman

William, the second son of John and Nancy Stevenson Silliman, was born in Pittsburgh on March 20, 1845. When he was only six years old, his parents moved to New Waterford. He grew up and was married in New Waterford on December, 1869, to Arminda Little. Shortly thereafter he and his wife moved to Blirstown, Iowa. Like his brother he was an excellent bookkeeper and accountant. Later he moved back to Ohio becoming the bookkeeper and chief accountant for the Wicks Estate in Youngstown, Ohio. He died in Youngstown on March 17, 1918. Arminda died in Youngstown on May 3, 1921.

William and Arminda had two sons John Little and Royden F. who died in infancy. John Little was born in Blirstown, Iowa on September 2, 1870 and died in Youngstown, Ohio on May 7, 1928. He was married on September 7, 1905 to

Catherine E. Howells. Catherine was born on July 8, 1882 and died in Youngstown on January 3, 1962.

John Little and Catherine Howells Silliman had three daughters and two sons all born in Youngstown, Ohio: Helen May, born May 10, 1910; Paul Howells, born June 15, 1911; Robert Leroy, born May 3, 1913; Catherine Anna, born February 27, 1918; and Elizabeth Arminda, born June 5, 1924.

Helen May Silliman is a public school teacher in Youngstown, Ohio. Paul Howells Silliman was married to Carrie Frances Shaffer on June 17, 1948. They live in West Middlesex, Pa. Robert Leroy Silliman was married, Oct. 25, 1941, to Bertha Dight of Mercer, Pa. They have two children: Roberta Lee, born Feb. 4, 1945, and John Warren, born June 5, 1949. Catherine Ann Silliman was married April 13, 1946 to John A. Lawrence of Farrell, Pa. They reside in West Middlesex, Pa. Elizabeth Arminda Silliman married, August 18, 1950, John Paul Adams. They have a daughter, Nancy Elizabeth, born Oct. 11, 1951.

3. Robert and Mary Ann

Robert, the second son of Samuel and Elizabeth Silliman, was born in Lancaster County, Pennsylvania, in 1815 and was ten years old when his parents moved to western Pennsylvania where he grew up in Ross township, Allegheny County. He is listed in an 1839 Pittsburgh Directory as Robert Silliman, carpenter.

In 1851 he and his wife Mary Ann, together with his brother John and his family, moved to Columbiana County, Ohio, just west of Pittsburgh. Later he moved to Texas where he was living in 1859 at the time of his father's death. He continued to live in Texas until his own death in 1891. His wife, Mary Ann, returned to Pittsburgh where she is listed in an 1893 Directory as "M. A. Silliman, widow of Robert, Arch street." Shortly after this date she moved to Franklin, Venango Co., Pa., where she continued to live until her death on July 5, 1909 at the age of eighty-two. Her will directed that she be buried "in

the Lot of which I am part owner situated in the Allegheny Cemetery, Pittsburgh, Pa." Her entire estate went to her nieces, Carry Spencer Tucker of Kansas City, and Alice E. Chess, the daughter of her husband's sister, Elizabeth Chess.

As her will directed, she is buried in Lot. 424, Section 10, near the graves of her husband's brothers and their wives, John and Nancy Stevenson Silliman, and James P. and Louise Dunn Silliman. Elizabeth Silliman Chess, who died on March 24, 1916, at the age of 91, and her husband, Thomas Chess, are also buried in this same Silliman family lot.

4. James P. and Mary L. Dunn

James, the youngest son of Samuel and Elizabeth Silliman, was born in Lancaster County on April 5, 1822. When he was only three years old, his parents moved to Allegheny County where he grew up in Ross township, now a part of the greater Pittsburgh area. In 1862 he was living in Racine, Meigs County, Ohio. Previous to this date he had married Mary Louise Dunn, who was born on March 4, 1829. Later James and Mary lived for a time in Meadville, Pennsylvania, but prior to 1873 they moved back to Pittsburgh where he became a very successful contractor and businessman. The first reference to him in a Pittsburgh Directory for 1873, shows that "J. P. Silliman contractor," was living at 163 Franklin Street. He was at first associated with W. T. Dunn as a public works contractor, and later he became one of the partners of the firm of Maxwell, Silliman, and Dunn, "foundrysmiths." Their chief business was the manufacturing of boilers.

James continued to live on Franklin Street up to the time of his death on Nov. 13, 1893 at the age of seventy-one. He was buried in the Silliman Family Lot in the Allegheny Cemetery in Pittsburgh. In his will dated Oct. 6, 1891, he left all his property "Real, Personal and Mixed—of whatsoever nature of kind" to his "beloved Wife M. L. Silliman." Furthermore he appointed her the "sole Executrix" of his estate. After her death the balance of his estate was to go to their adopted

daughter Mrs. Hattie M. Imbrie. James was a man of high moral standards and an active church man. Biographical data appearing in the *Pittsburgh Gazette* following his death, speaks of him as a "devout Christian."

His wife, Mary, was still living on Franklin Street in 1895, but in the 1897 Pittsburgh Blue Book she is listed as residing with her adopted daughter, "Mrs. Addison Murray Imbrie, nee Hattie Silliman," on Fifth Avenue. She died testate in Pittsburgh on Jan. 1, 1913. Her will was probated in Allegheny County. With the exception of a trust account for her grandson, "Boyd Vincent Imbrie to be paid to him when he arrives at the age of twenty-five," all the rest of her estate, including her house and lot at the corner of "Franklin and Manhattan Streets, Allegheny City" was left to her adopted daughter.

Mrs. Hattie Imbrie died on May 7, 1919. Her husband, Atty. A. M. Imbrie, died on March 12, 1932. Their son, Atty. Boyd Vincent Imbrie is still living in the old family home on fifth Avenue in Pittsburgh.

5. Samuel Jr. and Rowena Roberts

Samuel, son of Samuel and Elizabeth Silliman, was born in Lancaster County, Penna. on November 29, 1819. He was six years old when his parents moved to the Pittsburgh area where he grew up on his father's farm in Ross township. A deed recorded in 1849 shows that he and his first wife, Catherine, sold property in Allegheny City (now North Pittsburgh). When his father's estate was settled in 1860, he was living in Racine, Meigs County, Ohio. Shortly after this date his wife Catherine died.

On September 12, 1864 he was married in Meigs County to Rowena Roberts, and they continued to live in Racine until they moved to Marietta, Ohio in 1874. Rowena was the daughter of John and Sarah Sergeant Roberts. Sarah Sergeant was a granddaughter of Jeremiah Sergeant who had fought in the Revolution under General George Washington, and who was killed in action on Sept. 11, 1777 south of Philadelphia, in the

battle of Brandywine Creek.

Prior to 1880 Samuel and Rowena moved to Wheeling, West Virginia where Samuel became engaged in the grocery and produce business. Their home was on Wheeling Island which was, at that time, an exclusive residential section of Wheeling, connected with the city itself by a long bridge. Samuel continued to live there until his death on April 5, 1896, at the age of seventy-seven. He is buried in the old Peninsula Cemetery in Wheeling, as are his two daughters: Catherine, born in 1868 and died in 1881; and Belle, who was born in 1870 and died in 1895; and his oldest son, Frank, who died in 1893.

He was survived by his son, Robert H., and by his wife, Rowena, who continued to live with her son until her death in 1903. She is buried in the Coleman Cemetery just north of Ravenswood, West Virginia.

Samuel and Rowena Silliman had two sons and two daughters:

Frank Babb, born on July 21, 1865

Catherine, born in 1868

Belle E., born in 1870

Robert H., born on Feb. 26, 1875

A. Frank Babb Silliman

Frank B., son of Samuel and Rowena Roberts Silliman, was born on July 31, 1865. He grew up in Wheeling, W. Va. and was married in 1890 to Sarah Morrison, daughter of Samuel and Sarah Morrison. Frank B. was associated with his father in the produce business but died at the early age of twenty-seven, on Feb. 20, 1893. Frank and Sarah Silliman had three sons: Frank Robert, born Sept. 18, 1890, and died in early infancy; Samuel Orville, and Frank Babb, Jr.

Samuel Orville Silliman was born in Wheeling on Sept. 23, 1891. He attended the Wheeling public schools and later worked for the Naylor Dry Goods Company. His wife, Florence Hoskins Wheat, daughter of James M. and Amelia Wheat, was a member of an old Wheeling family. Samuel Orville and Florence

had one daughter, Katherine Marie Silliman, born Aug. 6, 1914, who married Harold J. Mullarkey. They have one son, Donald Harold, born Sept. 20, 1940.

Samuel Orville died in Wheeling on Dec. 14, 1915 at the age of twenty-four. His wife, Florence Silliman, continues to live in Wheeling, where she is a member of the Third Presbyterian Church and is active in the Dorcas Society and the social life of her church. Her daughter, Katherine Marie, lives in Fort Lauderdale, Florida, where her husband is the manager of the repair department of the Bell Electric Appliance and Air Conditioning Company.

Frank Babb, Jr., the youngest son of Frank Babb and Sarah Morrison Silliman, was born in Wheeling, W. Va., on August 11, 1893. He was educated in the Wheeling Public Schools. His first job was with the Labelle Iron Works in Wheeling. Later he was employed by the Carnegie Steel Mill in Bellaire, Ohio. In 1923 he accepted a position with the Wheeling Steel, at their Benwood Plant, where he continued to work until his retirement in 1958 after thirty-five years of service.

Frank B. Silliman, Jr. was married on May 2, 1914 to Eula D. Schramm, daughter of Daniel D. and Cynthia M. Schramm of Shadyside, Ohio. Eula Silliman graduated from the Martins Ferry High School in 1913. Her father was a prominent business man and store owner in Shadyside. The Sillimans moved to Shadyside, Ohio (just opposite Wheeling) in 1915 where they have continued to live for the past fifty years. Frank Silliman is a member of the Masonic Blue Lodge and Shrine and his wife is a member of the order of the Eastern Star. They have no children.

B. Robert H. Silliman

Robert H., the youngest child of Samuel Jr. and Rowena Roberts Silliman, was born in Marietta, Ohio, on February 26, 1875. Shortly after this date his parents moved to Wheeling, West Virginia, where he grew up. In June 1900 he married Sophia O. Coleman, the daughter of Thomas Benton Coleman

and Mary Ann White. Thomas Benton Coleman was born on September 5, 1838 on his father's plantation just north of Ravenswood, Virginia (now West Virginia), and Mary Ann White was born in Culpeper County, Virginia on January 29, 1841. The father of Thomas Benton Coleman, Thomas Coleman, had also been born in eastern Virginia. Robert Coleman, the great-great-grandfather of Thomas, had been born in Virginia in 1650, his parents having gone there direct from England in 1640.

Thomas Benton Coleman's father, born on June 22, 1801, came to the Ohio Valley in 1822, and soon after his marriage to Sarah Roush on December 25, 1823, he purchased "for a song" (according to family tradition) three thousand acres of rich farm and wooded land just north of Ravenswood.

Sarah Roush was a direct descendant of John Sebastian Rausch, a protestant minister born in Germany in 1560. His great grandson, John Adam Rausch, born in Hesse, Germany in 1711, had settled in Pennsylvania in 1736. The spelling of the name was later changed to Roush when John's grandson, Henry, Jr., settled in the Ohio Valley.

Thomas Coleman became a very successful farmer, sending his farm products each fall by large rafts down the Ohio and the Mississippi rivers to New Orleans. He even owned at one time one or more slaves. His first house and a store were near the banks of the Ohio river, and the place was known to river men for many years as Coleman's Landing. In the 1840's he built a new colonial-style house farther back from the river, and in 1859 he built a brick church for the community, a church still known to this day as the Coleman Chapel. This church was officially dedicated on June 22, 1860. It is now the oldest church in Jackson County, West Virginia, and at the time of their centennial celebration in 1960 the Silliman brothers donated sufficient land for a manse, a church house, and a "Lord's acre," from property they had inherited from their mother, Sophia Coleman. The gift was in memory of their mother and their grandfather, Thomas Benton Coleman.

Behind the church was a cemetery which he did not give

to the community but reserved for himself, his wife, and their descendants. The people could worship in the church, but unless they were Colemans, or Coleman-in-laws, they could not be buried in the church cemetery.

In addition to this church and lot, Thomas Coleman also gave the land and built, near the church, the first school house in the community. He not only paid the major portion of the salary of the circuit-riding preacher but also most of the salary of the school teacher as well. Furthermore, the teacher was expected to live in the Coleman home and tutor the younger children. Thus it was in the Coleman home that his son, Thomas Benton Coleman, first met in 1863, Mary Ann White, the new school teacher, and persuaded her that marriage was preferable to a career of country school teaching.

Sarah Roush Coleman died on April 6, 1882, and Thomas died on February 24, 1890. Both are buried in the Coleman Cemetery. Upon the death of his father, Thomas Benton Coleman, who had lived in the house of his father since 1882, inherited the old homestead and (together with his wife) the responsibility as well for the care of the church and cemetery. Their oldest grandson, Robert B. Silliman, still has fond memories of going to Coleman Chapel with his grandmother on a week day to help her trim the lamp wicks and refill the kerosene lamps.

Also he often accompanied his grandfather to the cemetery and helped him cut the grass around the different graves. It is still a beautiful cemetery with a large weeping willow tree at each corner and two nearby walnut trees. There was also a double iron gate at the entrance on which small boys could swing, and a wide, stone-capped four-foot wall around the cemetery on which children could walk or even run. It was a wonderful place to play hide-and-seek and a favorite playground for the Silliman and Coleman grandchildren, despite their awe of the tall needle column in the center of the cemetery and the two large monuments encircled by an oval concrete walk around the graves of their great grandparents. All these grandchildren fully expected to be buried some day in this

cemetery in one of the large lots reserved for each of the children of Thomas and Sarah and their descendants.

It was on this homestead that Sophia Coleman was born and her marriage, of course, had taken place in the brick chapel built by her grandfather.

At the time of their marriage Robert H. Silliman was an electrician. The young couple lived for a short time in Gallipolis, Ohio and then in Ravenswood. In both places Robert H. served as the town electrician. Then in 1903 Thomas Benton Coleman persuaded his son-in-law to move to the farm and take charge of his country store and assist in the management of the farm. Here they continued to live until 1923 when Robert H. became the chief engineer of the U.S. Government Ohio River Lock Number 12 at Wheeling, West Virginia. He had given up farming four years earlier when the U.S. Federal government began building Lock No. 21 just north of Ravenswood. He had been employed first as an electrician and then as an assistant engineer in the building of this project. The opportunity to return to his old home-town of Wheeling greatly pleased him. The rest of his life was spent there. He had planned to retire in early 1942, but because of the shortage of manpower, the War Department asked him to stay on for the duration of the war.

He continued to work until the spring of 1944, when he developed pneumonia and a kidney infection. He retired in July, 1944 and died in Wheeling on March 5, 1945. He was a 32° Mason and a member of the Order of the Mystic Shrine. His wife died on July 29, 1958 at the home of her son, Capt. John R. Silliman, in Memphis, Tennessee. Both husband and wife are buried in the Greenwood Cemetery in Wheeling. They are survived by their sons, Robert Benton, John Roush, and Frank P. Silliman.

(1) Robert Benton Silliman

Author's Apology

Inescapably the writer has come to that awkward place

where the question must be faced—what to say about himself, and how.

No one wants to appear overly impressed with himself in the broad perspective of his extended family “tribe,” past and present. Yet who wants to be slighted?

I have heeded the advice and insistence of an interested friend (and non-Silliman) that to underplay that part of the family story in which I have been a character who experienced some unusual adventures would be false modesty and perhaps unfair to those who read this book.

So here, scrutinized and edited by that same friend, hangs this member of the Silliman family tree.

* * *

Robert, eldest son of Robert H. and Sophia Coleman Silliman, was born in Ravenswood, West Virginia, on May 23, 1902. As a senior and class president at Ravenswood High School, he won second place in a state oratorical contest held at West Virginia University in Morgantown in March, 1921, and graduated from the Ravenswood High School the following June.

Awarded a two-year honor scholarship, he attended Marietta College, Marietta, Ohio. There he was a member of the Alpha Tau Omega fraternity, its treasurer in his junior year, and circulation manager of the college Annual. In his senior year he transferred to the University of Chicago, graduating in 1925 as a history major and an economics minor.

After graduation he was awarded a Harold H. Swift scholarship in the University of Chicago School of Business Administration, to take a year's work in graduate courses related to the meat packing industry, and promised a job with Swift and Company thereafter, if wanted.

But Robert Silliman did not complete the course. An offer by the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions—to teach history at Silliman Institute in the Philippines—had greater appeal than starting life in the Chicago stock yards. However, he fully expected to return to Chicago after one 3-year term of teaching

in the Philippines.

In August, 1926, the inexperienced teacher, age twenty-four, arrived in Dumaguete, then a small provincial capital, four hundred miles south of Manila, found classes already in session, and began teaching the day after his arrival.

Silliman Institute, which became a University in 1938, was little more than a junior college in 1926, with a high school department larger than the college itself.¹ The new history teacher was given three high school classes plus three college classes, requiring six different preparations. At the same time, he served as the acting head of the combined high school and college history departments, helped with the book store, and was given a Sunday School class for good measure. The history department consisted of himself and two Filipino assistants, responsible mostly for high school classes and almost as inexperienced as the newcomer from America. The college history department grew rapidly, becoming a respectable department with additional staff and, by 1931, offered a full history major.

The trustees, generous in their appointments, made him an associate professor after his first furlough in 1930-31, when he returned to Chicago and took two quarters of graduate work in American history under Dr. William E. Dodd and Dr. Marcus W. Jernegan, and two specialized courses in the teaching of history under Dr. Rollo M. Tryon. In 1939, following another year of graduate study in the United States, he became a full professor.

Within a year after his arrival in the Philippines, on March 18, 1927, Robert Silliman was married to Metta Armstrong Jacobs. Her father, Dr. Charles Dutton Jacobs, was a Presbyterian minister. Her mother, Abby Palmer Jacobs, had died

¹ Silliman Institute, the first private school to be established under the American flag in the Philippines, was founded in 1901 by the Presbyterian Board of Foreign Missions, and named after Horace B. Silliman of Cohoes, N. Y., who urged the Board to establish such a school and whose generous support made its founding possible. Horace B. Silliman was a direct descendant of Daniel Silliman of Fairfield, Conn.

when her daughter was twelve. Two of Metta Silliman's ancestors, David Armstrong and Levi Palmer, had fought in the Revolution. His wife's being a member of the Daughters of the American Revolution may have inspired him to prove that he also could be a Son of the American Revolution.

Mrs. Silliman had shortly preceded her husband to Silliman Institute. She is a graduate of the Detroit Eastern High School and of Western College for Women at Oxford, Ohio, then a Presbyterian school. Before coming to the Philippines she had earned her master of arts degree from the University of Illinois.

Living on the Silliman campus was extremely pleasant, and both Robert B. and Metta Silliman carried full teaching loads besides being the respective heads of the history and English departments. Ten months of their second furlough (the school year 1937-38) were spent in Easton, Pennsylvania, where the husband was a part-time assistant in the history department at Lafayette College and earned his M.A. degree in history. Returning to the Philippines in 1938 they resumed teaching until December 8, 1941, when Silliman University was closed by the sudden blows after Pearl Harbor and the quick invasion of the Philippines by the Japanese.

Fortunately Dumaguete City was one of the last provincial capitals occupied by the Japanese. The city and the Silliman campus were occupied on May 26, 1942. In the meantime all of the American faculty and most of the Filipino faculty had gone to the hills and mountains eight miles west of Dumaguete. The Silliman family, consisting of Robert and Metta Silliman, Mrs. Silliman's sister, Abby Jacobs, their two house-girls, and a newly married Filipino couple, Joaquin and Nui Funda, left Dumaguete in early May, 1942, going first to the town of Siaton, southernmost town on Negros Island.

With the help of Mayor Telesforo Tayko, Silliman graduate and former pupil of Mr. Silliman, they constructed a small house five miles from the town along the upper Siaton river, which runs north and has its source on the opposite side of the "Horns of Negros" just west of Dumaguete. These horns or twin peaks rise to an elevation of over six thousand feet.

They chose the Siaton Valley as an evacuation site because its rising elevation and two mountain ranges on both sides of the swift Siaton River offered endless retreat, and the Sillimans were determined never to be captured. The location was a fortunate one, for by the end of 1943 the Sillimans were still free, whereas most of the other American faculty families were in concentration camps.

They had not yet finished their first evacuation house in the Siaton Valley when the Japanese arrived in Siaton on May 30. That same afternoon a Japanese patrol made a raid up the valley coming within less than a mile of the place where the Sillimans were then living. However, the Sillimans had been warned by runners that the Japanese were approaching, and they spent most of the afternoon in the nearby woods until another messenger sent by Mayor Tayko informed them that the Japanese had returned to town.

The next morning, soon after daylight, the Sillimans moved two miles farther up the valley, a forty-five minute hike along a swift tributary stream and up a steep mountain side, the beginning of a series of retreats over a two-year period of playing hide-and-seek with the Japanese. While the Japanese were to burn three of their hastily constructed bamboo and grass-roofed evacuation huts, there was always another secret hiding place ready and prepared still deeper in the forests or mountain vastness.

In August 1942 a small guerrilla band led by a former Silliman student made its first ambush along the provincial highway between Dumaguete and Siaton. Soon guerrilla bands sprang up in every town on the island. Bridges were burned, telegraph wires cut, and by September the Japanese found themselves with insufficient troops to garrison the island. Highways were no longer safe for anything except armored trucks, which they did not have. Holding the larger towns, they gave up the smaller ones like Siaton.

For the next eight months the Siaton Valley was a happy place. The Sillimans actually returned to their first and better evacuation house, which promptly became the unofficial head-

quarters of the Siaton guerrilla unit, whose leader became Joaquin Funda. It was in this house that Eleanor Funda, who would later become their foster daughter, was born on April 1, 1943. Lieutenant (later captain) Funda's official headquarters and camp were, of course, nearer the town.

Thus Robert Silliman became the unofficial adviser to the Siaton guerrillas, and being the only uncaptured American male in the area his name was often used (or misused). He was given credit even inside Dumaguete for things which he never did, such as having led one ambush, and of having a beard over a foot long. The truth is that his beard was just a short goatee, and he never killed a single Japanese or a single traitor during the war. It is true that most of the time he carried a .45 caliber pearl-handled colt revolver, recovered from a dead Filipino collaborator, but the gun was given to him by Lt. Funda.

It will never be known how many lives he may have saved by holding back the Siaton guerrillas and even a few officers who were trigger-happy and wanted to liquidate every suspected Japanese collaborator. It was Lt. Funda, and not Bob Silliman, who pulled down the Japanese flag and raised the American flag over the Siaton town hall after his guerrilla boys had captured the town. It was Robert Silliman, however, who saved the life of the elderly chief of police of Siaton, the only pro-Japanese official in the town, after the guerrillas had captured him and had locked him up in the town jail under death sentence. They originally planned to kill him on sight, but found him at his home, sick in bed and trembling with fear and offering no resistance to arrest. Later he was permitted to go into the hills with the promise that he would never again work for the Japanese should they recapture the town—a promise he never broke.

Months of waiting for recognition or some sign of help from forces outside the Philippines ended on a dark night in January, 1943, when four Filipino officers from Australia were set ashore on southern Negros, in a rubber boat from an American submarine. Their leader was Major Jesus Villamor, a Filipino aviator, evacuated to Australia just before the Fall of

Bataan. Thus, by chance, Robert Silliman was the first American in the Philippines to meet Major Villamor, the first United States Armed Forces of the Far East officer to return to the Philippines after the surrender. Mission of the four was to gather intelligence reports to be transmitted to Australia by radio with fuller reports to be sent back to Australia by submarines which would appear from time to time. The group brought an official radio transmitter set, first to be used in the Philippines after the surrender of the American Army in April, 1942. This was the beginning of a series of such stations.

Robert Silliman found himself in a new and full-time job—writing reports for Major Villamor, establishing contacts even inside Dumaguete to obtain needed information, travelling throughout the free territory of southern Negros talking with officials, and writing up reports on civilian morale, Japanese propaganda as a policy of attraction, and attitude and loyalty of key people inside Japanese-occupied towns.

News that an American submarine had pierced the Japanese barrier and landed aid on the island of Negros electrified the guerrillas and boosted civilian morale. But orders from GHQ Australia were to lie low, to perfect better organization, and above everything else, to set up an intelligence network. The guerrillas were not to provoke the Japanese unnecessarily until they could be better armed and until General MacArthur himself was ready to strike in force.

To effect a better guerrilla organization the entire island was to constitute a single military district, and Major Villamor was appointed by General MacArthur to be the first district over-all commander, with each local unit a full company under a sectional regimental commander. Major Villamor was further directed to set up an official civil government for the free territory of the Island of Negros, which had formerly included the two provinces of Negros Oriental and Negros Occidental.

Logical choice for Governor was a former mayor of Bacolod City, Alfredo Montelibano, who had refused to serve under the Japanese, and was living in the mountains. There were to be five Deputy Governors, corresponding to the five

sub-military districts into which the island had been divided. In early June, 1943 Robert Silliman received an official communication from Major Villamor, dated May 30, 1943 and marked "secret and confidential," informing him that he was being appointed Deputy Governor of the fifth district, including the Dumaguete area and the entire southern section of the Island. The communication read in part:

I also feel that as such (Deputy Governor) you will be in an even more favorable position to acquire and furnish me the information which you know is so vitally required. Therefore, if it is acceptable to you, I shall propose immediately (To GHQ Australia) that you be designated as the deputy governor. . . I hope I shall very soon receive a favorable reply from you.

The papers you sent by Mr. Bell are not only interesting but most valuable. I do hope you can continue to obtain information from your friends inside (Dumaguete). . . things are now beginning to move swiftly and that is why it becomes even more imperative during these days that we get as much accurate information regarding the enemy as it is possible to obtain.

With my warmest personal regards, I remain

Sincerely yours,

(Sg.) Jesus A. Villamor
Major, A.F. (Aus)
District Commander

Because of the need for close co-operation between the army and the civil government, it was decided that the official headquarters of the new deputy governor should be near the command post of the regimental headquarters company for Oriental Negros, already established on the Malabo plateau in the mountains seven miles northwest of Dumaguete.

Alarmed by reports of growing guerrilla strength and submarines landing in the unoccupied areas, the Japanese brought in heavy re-inforcements. Their major objective was Malabo, and a sudden attack on the first outposts below Malabo, on the night of June 15, 1943, ended three days later in the

capture and burning of every house and office on the Malabo plateau. However, the Deputy Governor and the newly-appointed district auditor, treasurer, and all of their office force had again escaped the clutches of the Japanese. Not a single government record was lost, the most important ones being in the knapsack of the Deputy Governor as again he fled through the hills to the Siaton Valley.

After a month of intensive mopping up operations ending with the burning of every guerrilla camp along the coastal area and recapture of every town south of Dumaguete, the Japanese announced their campaign a success and withdrew their major forces for similar mopping up campaigns on other islands.

Again the guerrillas moved down from mountain retreats, and after the Japanese withdrew their garrison from Siaton, the town was re-occupied by guerrilla forces. Within a month Siaton was official headquarters of the Deputy Governor of the free territory of Southern Negros, but with knapsacks and files ready for immediate departure up the valley should the Japanese again land in force.

By December the Japanese, bottled up within the city limits of Dumaguete, had real cause for worry. General MacArthur was fulfilling his promise to "Return" and was closing in on the Philippines. Determined to wipe out all resistance behind their lines before it was too late, the Japanese again sent large re-inforcements to Dumaguete, and December 31, 1943 they recaptured the town of Siaton. This time they meant business and a permanent garrison was established. Soon daily patrols were sent out farther and farther up the valley. But it was not until January 23, 1944, that they reached and surrounded the next to the last evacuation house of the Deputy Governor and his family, who had left the house only three days before for another hide-out, deeper in the forests but less than a half-mile away.

While no one would tell where the Sillimans had gone, the Japanese captured a neighbor who had helped build their last evacuation house. After twenty-four hours of torture he admitted he knew where they were and agreed to lead the Japanese to

their place. At noon on Wednesday, January 26, as the Sillimans ate their lunch, a breathless guard rushed into the house to report that the Japanese were on the trail just below the house. The family escaped barely five minutes ahead of the enemy. That night the Japanese slept in the house while the Sillimans slept in the same forest the enemy had combed all afternoon, one patrol having passed within twenty feet of Mrs. Silliman and her younger sister, Abby Jacobs, hiding behind a large fallen tree just off the trail.

Soon after daylight the Silliman party crossed a low range of mountains through virgin forests to a guerrilla camp. After two nights in the camp the family, accompanied by twelve guerrilla guards, hiked one whole night and until three o'clock the next afternoon to reach the headquarters of Col. Salvador Abcede, new district commander replacing Major Villamor, who had been recalled to Australia.

Unknown to them at that time was an order to Col. Abcede (following the ruthless killing of all Americans captured in Panay) from General MacArthur to evacuate all American civilians on the island of Negros to Australia. A week later Robert and Metta Silliman and Abby Jacobs were aboard an American submarine which had just delivered to Col. Abcede forty-five tons of guns and ammunition for the Negros guerrillas.

That night, safely aboard the USS Narwhal, Miss Jacobs who had started her diary in the early morning with "Better just say, Well, here is another morning—*Bahala na* (come what may)" concluded her day, February 7, 1944, with the following entry:

And then there was Bob putting one arm around Metta and one around me, and smiling, yet with a seriousness that we understand so completely saying "Well, girls, this is the best *payag* (small native hut) we've been in in a long time, isn't it?"

And then a final entry:

About midnight now. I think we are on the surface. Will

be under all day tomorrow. Will land at Port Darwin and be taken by plane to Brisbane. Not one of us is quite able to believe this has happened to us—a difference of five minutes and we would have been dead. Dear Lord, it couldn't happen, but it did! For all three of us!

The Sillimans lived in New York City from July 1, 1944, until July, 1946. There a Silliman University office was set up in the Presbyterian Headquarters building on Fifth Avenue to secure books and other school supplies and materials for the day when Silliman University could re-open.

Robert and Metta Silliman returned to Dumaguete in August, 1946, to resume their teaching despite the devastated condition of the campus after three years of Japanese occupation. The husband, in addition to a full load of teaching, was immediately appointed Dean of the College of Arts and Sciences. In 1948 he was made Dean of Instruction, a position he held until 1953 when he became the Vice President of the University. From April, 1960, until June, 1962, he was Acting President, and since 1962 has served as the Executive Vice President. He continues to be an active Rotarian, a charter member of the Dumaguete Rotary Club and its first vice president and second two-term president.

On June 7, 1956, Lafayette College, during its One Hundred and Twenty-First annual commencement program, conferred upon Robert B. Silliman the honorary degree of Doctor of Science in Education. The citation, read by President Ralph C. Hutchison follows:

The colonialism of Western powers in the East is perhaps the primary international problem with which the world is confronted today. Escape from colonialism is fraught with dangers to the world. But America has been privileged to perform in the Philippines a great colonial mission to prepare a brave and noble people for their independence, to free them, and to see them stand strong through danger, invasion, enslavement and reconstruction. This has been possible through the education of Philippine leadership, and would have been possible in no other way. This has been your achievement. In the teaching in the

classroom, in the reconstruction of the University, you have with marked ability, quiet faith and at great sacrifice given your life that the people of the Philippines would be able for and worthy of freedom, sovereignty, and leadership in the Far East and in the assembly of nations. For this distinctive and great service to international peace and freedom, we honor you.

An even greater honor, in the eyes and hearts of Robert and Metta Silliman, is an action of the Silliman University Board of Trustees August 27, 1965, which approved "the granting of the degree of Doctor of Laws, *honoris causa* to Dr. Robert B. Silliman, and the degree of Doctor of Humanities to Mrs. Metta J. Silliman." These degrees are to be granted at the close of the 1965-66 academic year, just prior to their retirement after forty years of service to the University.

And, meanwhile, back in Chicago, Swift and Company had held its own in the meat packing industry.

(2) John Roush Silliman

John R., second son of Robert H. and Sophia Coleman Silliman, was born near Ravenswood, West Virginia on April 13, 1905. After attending the Ravenswood High School for three years, he joined the U.S. Navy, being inducted on June 5, 1923. At first he served on a U.S. destroyer and later on a submarine which was stationed at the submarine base at Honolulu. He was honorably discharged from the Navy on May 11, 1927 having become in the meantime a qualified diesel engineer.

His first civilian job was as a river engineer with Keystone Sand Company of Pittsburgh, Pa. In 1928 he was employed by the Hillman Transportation Company as the first assistant engineer of the "J. H. Hillman." Later, when his brother Frank was promoted to the head engineer of the entire company, John succeeded his brother as the chief engineer of the "Hillman."

On August 2, 1933 John R. Silliman was married to Olive Nelson, the daughter of Jennie M. and George Edwin Nelson. Finding it difficult to be away from home and to be confined to

living aboard a river boat, John decided to leave the river, and in 1937 he accepted a job as a maintenance engineer with the Pittsburgh Steel Company, a position he held until early 1941. In the meantime he had taken correspondence courses and the government examination for U.S. boiler inspectors. In 1941 he was appointed assistant Boiler Inspector, Bureau of Merchant Marine Inspection for the Pittsburgh district under the Department of Commerce. In June 1943 when the U.S. Coast Guard took over all in-land waters, John R. Silliman was inducted into the navy as a Lieutenant. During the war it was his job to inspect the boilers as well as the steel that went into the construction of all U.S. naval vessels built in the greater Pittsburgh area. On August 1, 1944 he was promoted to a Lieutenant Commander, and a Commander on August 8, 1951.

In 1953 he moved his family to Cairo, Illinois when he became Officer-in-Charge of the U.S. Coast Guard Marine Inspection for the Cairo district. In 1955 he was transferred to Memphis, Tennessee where he held a similar position but was in command of a larger district. Then in 1958 he was assigned to Cincinnati, Ohio and back to Pittsburgh in 1960, having been promoted on July 1, 1960 to the rank of Captain. In 1962 he was transferred to St. Louis, Mo., to become Chief Merchant Marine Inspector of the 2nd U.S. Coast Guard District.

On April 1, 1964 he retired after twenty-five years of service in the Navy and returned to Pittsburgh where he is now living.

His only daughter, Joan Roberta Silliman, was born in Pittsburgh on May 17, 1935. After graduation from high school in 1953 she spent one year at Ohio Wesleyan University where she was a member of the Chi Omega Sorority. Her best friend was a Delta Tau Delta. He was also a star football player, president of the senior class and at the same time a Phi Beta Kappa student. Being very much in love, Joan decided that marriage was preferable to a college career. Thus Joan Roberta Silliman and Lowell Joseph Benson were married on August 28,

1954.

After Lowell's two years of service in the army and two years of high school teaching and athletic coaching the Bensons moved to Cleveland, Ohio in 1958 where the husband was employed by the Cleveland Trust Bank. At the same time he took night classes at Western Reserve University completing his master's degree in Business Administration in June 1962. The Bensons now live in Dallas, Texas where the husband is employed as an investment analyst in the Trust Department of the Republic National Bank.

Joan and Lowell Benson have two daughters: Dawn Renee, born June 3, 1957 and Lisa, born August 31, 1961.

(3) Frank P. Silliman

Frank, the youngest son of Robert H. and Sophia Coleman Silliman, was born in Grant District, Jackson County, West Virginia on December 26, 1906. He attended the Ravenswood High School and was the center on the football team.

During the summer of 1925 he was employed as a laborer at the Ohio River Lock Number 12, but being interested in boats he soon secured a second job as an engine room oiler on a boat that was passing through the locks. The engineer of this boat was one of the oldest on the river and had a reputation of being hard to please. The average engine room boy lasted just one round-trip down the river from Pittsburgh to New Orleans. At the end of the summer Frank was still not only in the good graces of the chief engineer but he had been promoted to a third class fireman. He was 19 years old at the time.

Instead of returning to school he decided to stay out of school for a year, but he never did return. However, this did not mean that his education was over, for he was determined to learn everything he could about engines and for the next three years he surrounded himself with engineering books. His free hours when the boat was tied up at a coal mine or a mill dock and during the long hours he was off duty aboard,

were devoted to study—even taking correspondence courses in drafting and design and other engineering subjects. Later when he became the chief engineer for the company, he took night classes at Carnegie Institute of Technology in Pittsburgh.

His promotions to second and first class fireman and third engineer were rapid. By 1926 he was a second class engineer, but he had gone as far as he could because the law required that one must be twenty-one before he could take the government examination for a chief's license. Soon after his twenty-first birthday he took the examination in Pittsburgh and passed it with one of the highest ratings ever given in the Pittsburgh district up to that time. He then became the chief engineer of the "J. H. Hillman" a new late-model boat named after the owner of the company and the queen of the Hillman line. He continued to be the chief engineer of the "Hillman" until January, 1928 when he left the river to become the Port engineer of the Hillman Transportation company. In 1951, he became vice president of the company, in charge of operations, and in Feb, 1961 he became the President, a position he has continued to hold until the present time.

After he became the chief engineer of the company, a small maintenance dock and ways was set up in Brownsville, Pa. primarily for the repair work of their own boats. Later these ways were extended and their machine shops enlarged that the company might build its own barges. The operation was so successful that the company decided to build its own tow boats as well. Thus a new company was organized, known as the Hillman Barge and Construction Company. During World War II this company built landing craft for the U.S. Navy and other small transport boats for the industrial firms throughout the Mississippi river system.

Since the war the Hillman Barge and Construction Company has built numerous boats and barges for various companies for use on the Ohio, Mississippi, and other inland waters, some of which were personally designed by Frank Silliman himself. From 1935 to 1947 Frank Silliman served as the manager of the Hillman Barge and Construction Company and from 1947

to 1951 as the Vice President in charge of operations. In 1951 he became President of the Company.

Since 1961 he has served as president of both the Hillman Barge and Construction Company and the Hillman Transportation Company. At the same time he has served as a director of both companies. He is, furthermore, President and Director of two other companies—The General Marine Leasing Inc., and the Silliman Towing Company—both affiliated with the extensive Hillman interests, such as steel mills, coal mines, and even banks which they largely own. Frank Silliman is a Director of the First National Bank of Fredericktown, Pa.

He is also a Director of: The Pittsburgh Coal Exchange; the Pittsburgh Propeller Club; the Mississippi Valley Association, with headquarters in St. Louis, Missouri; the Ohio Valley Improvement Association, with head office in Cincinnati, Ohio; and the American Bureau of Shipping (New York City). Moreover he is a Director and Vice President of the American Waterways Operators, whose head office is in Washington, D.C.

He is a member of the well known Duquesne Club in Pittsburgh whose founders included Andrew Carnegie and Andrew W. Mellon. He is also a member of the Pittsburgh Chamber of Commerce, the Traffic Club of Pittsburgh, the Society of Naval Architects and Marine Engineers, the American Welding Society and the Engineers Society of Western Pennsylvania.¹

He is a member of the Ashton F. and M. Masons in Ravenswood, W. Va., and a member of the Syria Temple Shrine in Pittsburgh. His church affiliation is the Upper St. Clair, Westminster Presbyterian Church in Pittsburgh.

On December 23, 1926 Frank Silliman was married in Ravenswood, W. Va. to Evalyn Edelen, daughter of Carl Dent and Laila M. Edelen. Frank and Evalyn are the parents of John Robert, born March 28, 1929 and Jane Lou, born on June 6, 1931.

¹ *Who's Who in Commerce and Industry*, Eleventh International Edition.

(a) John Robert Silliman

John Robert Silliman, son of Frank and Evalyn Silliman, was born in Ravenswood, West Virginia on March 28, 1929. He graduated from the Brownsville Pennsylvania High School in 1946. He enrolled as a pre-medical student at Washington & Jefferson College after high school graduation and determined during the first year there that cutting up cats and the pursuance of medicine were not for him, so he gave in to earlier leanings toward writing and journalism and enrolled at Waynesburg College in Waynesburg, Pennsylvania, as an English major.

The Korean War came along two years later and John R. was drafted into the army where as an army private he assumed such responsibilities as Director of Radio and Television Department of Public Information at the Infantry Center of the Army at Fort Benning, Georgia. He served the last year of his two year army duty in Tokyo, Japan as a program manager in the Armed Forces Radio Services. His duties included writing and production for the U.S. Army as well as occasional work for the Voice of America. His earlier experience during college at radio station, WJPA, in Washington, Pennsylvania prepared him initially for a career in radio and television broadcasting.

In October of 1953 upon honorable discharge from the U.S. Army he obtained employment as a writer, television producer and on-the-air performer with the Westinghouse Broadcasting Company's Pittsburgh station, KDKA-TV. He has remained with KDKA-TV since then and has proved himself competent in that he won many nationally coveted awards, including: The Alfred P. Sloan National Writer's Award for outstanding creative work on American Television; the Carnegie Institute of Technology Carnegie Awards medal in 1961; the American Heart Association's award for "Meritorious Service," the Pennsylvania Associated Press Broadcaster's award for "outstanding commentary" in 1962; and the first award ever presented anyone by the University of Pittsburgh

chapter of Delta Sigma Pi for "Outstanding Community Awareness."

He has become a recognized and respected broadcaster, active in a diversified way in social and economic problems expressly in the Pittsburgh and Pennsylvania area.

He has served on numerous boards and organizations including: the Board of the Allegheny County Chapter of the Pennsylvania Association for Retarded Children; the Governor's Advisory Committee on Mental Health and Retardation; and various other committees for the Allegheny County Heart Association and the United Mental Health Services in the county.

In 1963, John R. Silliman started his own public relations and film producing company with offices in the Empire Building in downtown Pittsburgh, still keeping his professional association several blocks away from his office with KDKA-TV and the Westinghouse Broadcasting Company.

It should be pointed out that he assumed the professional name of John Roberts in 1953 since he felt it had greater value than the more difficult often misspelled name of Silliman, and Roberts is an old family name. He also admits to attempting as a youth in his early twenties to prove himself alone without possible benefit from a name fairly well entrenched in Pittsburgh industrial areas by his father.

John R. Silliman was married to the former Carol Dean Cole, daughter of Charles Leroy and Vena L. Cole of Whittier, California. They first met when Carol appeared in a principally listed role of the Broadway production, *Wonderful Town* at the Nixon legitimate theater in Pittsburgh, Pennsylvania. They were married by the Rev. Robert Lamont in the First Presbyterian Church in Pittsburgh on May 14, 1955. They have two sons: Matthew Cole Silliman, born Sept. 2, 1956; and Dent Christian Silliman, born July 20, 1960. They purchased their first home in Mount Lebanon, a suburb of Pittsburgh in January, 1960, and sold that home in 1965 to build and design their new home in a Pittsburgh suburb known as Brookside Farms Estates.

(b) Jane Lou Anderson

Jane Lou, daughter of Frank P. and Evalyn Silliman, was born in Ravenswood, West Virginia on June 6, 1931. She graduated from the Brownsville, Penna. High School, with high honors, in May, 1949. She then attended West Virginia University and received an A.B. degree (cum laude) in June 1953. A year later she completed the B.S. education major. She was a member of Alpha Xi Delta Social Sorority and an honorary member of the Alpha Epsilon Delta (Pre-Med) and Kappa Delta Pi (Education).

On August 21, 1954 she was married to Walker Anderson, son of Walker and Katherine McQuiston Anderson. Her husband was a graduate of the Baldwin Township High School in Pittsburgh and the Virginia Polytechnic Institute. He served in the USAF from January 1951 until November 1952 as an Electronics-Munitions officer (1st Lt.). In college he had been a member of Tau Beta Pi (Engineering Society), Omicron Delta Kappa (Leadership Society) and Alpha Psi Omega (Drama Society).

From 1952 up to the present time Walker Anderson has been connected with the Westinghouse Electric Corporation, first as a sales engineer, Aviation Gas Turbine Division, then as a sales representative (1959-1962) Atomic Defense and Space Group in Utica, New York. Since 1962 the Andersons have lived in Rockville, Maryland, the husband's office being in Washington, D.C. His present position is Field Sales Representative, Atomic Defense and Space Group. This involves sales of electronic and nuclear products to the National Aeronautics and Space Administration and Atomic Energy Commission.

Jane and Walker Anderson are members of the United Presbyterian Church of Rockville, Jane teaching in the Sunday School and nursery department. She is also president of the Old Farm Garden Club; secretary of the Old Farm Civic Association, a room mother and chairman of the Parent Teachers Association. Their social life includes Washington society. They

were among guests at President Johnson's Inaugural Ball.

The Walkers have three children: Susan Ashley, born October 7, 1955; Walker Anderson VI, born November 13, 1958; and Amy Leigh, born August 1, 1962.

Susan and her brother Walker attend the Rockville, Maryland public school. Susan has already become, at the age of ten, an expert equestrian and has loved horses from an early age. She is also an excellent student. Walker is especially interested in space ships to the moon and wants to be an engineer like his father.

Thomas and Agnes

Squire Thomas
1713-1810

Alexander and Margaret
d. 1774 d. 1807-08

John

Capt. Thomas
1757-1838
m.
Mary Middaugh

Isabella
1758-1844
m.
John Morrison

James
1760-1841
m.
Mary Hunter

John
abt. 1762-
m.
?

Alexander
1764-1846
m.
Mary Brown

David
b. 1766-
m.
Maria

CHAPTER VI

CAPT. THOMAS AND MARY MIDDAUGH

1. Early Life and Settlement in the White Deer Valley

Thomas, the eldest son of Alexander and Margaret (Margot), was born in Lower Mount Bethel township, Northampton County, on September 12, 1757. He was only seventeen at the time of his father's death, and for the rest of his mother's life he was her constant companion and source of strength.¹

His youth and family obligations may have prevented him from joining the army at the beginning of the Revolution. While the British had evacuated Philadelphia by June 18, 1778, the Indians, with Tory and British backing, continued to harass the upper frontiers of the West and North branches of the Susquehanna river valleys. The famous Wyoming massacre had occurred on July 4, 1778. In the face of these Indian dangers, the 6th Northampton Battalion under Col. Jacob Stroud was one of the units assigned to drive the hostile Indians out of the area. Pennsylvania Archive Records show that Thomas served on the frontier and that on May 14, 1778 he was listed as a private under Capt. Patrick Campbell in the 6th Battalion under the command of Col. Stroud.² In this same company was John Brown, who was later his neighbor in the White Deer Valley.

Another official record shows that in 1780 Thomas was still serving under Capt. Campbell together with his younger brothers, John and James, and the Brown brothers, John, Charles, and Alexander. After the war these same two sets of brothers became neighbors in Northumberland County.

On April 29, 1782, Thomas was listed as a private under

¹ See pages 24-26.

² *Penna. Archives*, 5th Series, Vol. VIII, p. 434.

Capt. Campbell, but by June 23, 1783, as shown by a witnessed list of Officers, he had become a lieutenant.

In the spring of 1784, he was under Capt. John Brown, and in the same 5th Battalion appear the names of his brothers, John, James, and Alexander and also that of his future brother-in-law, John Morrison, who likewise settled after the war in Northumberland County. A record for the latter part of 1784 reveals that Thomas served as a lieutenant in the 6th Battalion under Col. La Wall together with his brother, Alexander. By 1785 he had become a captain of the 3rd Co., 6th Battalion, Northampton County Militia under the command of Col. La Wall. His brother, Alexander, now came under his direct command.

By 1786 there was again peace and order on the frontiers. The three brothers Thomas, John, and Alexander were once more living in Lower Mount Bethel township where they paid taxes as single men. By 1788 only Thomas and his brother John were listed in the Lower Mount Bethel Tax records as having paid a ten-pound tax each as single men. Alexander was no longer single, for he had married Mary Brown in 1787. Prior to 1790 John had joined his brothers, James and Alexander, in Northumberland County. Thomas continued to live with his mother on their old home place in Lower Mount Bethel until 1795. In the meantime he had acquired additional land in Lower Mount Bethel as he had been given a warranted land grant in July of 1787 for one hundred and eighteen acres which had been surveyed on January 5 of the same year.

On April 9, 1795 Thomas married Mary Middaugh, the daughter of Garret Middaugh and Nellie Van Fleet. Shortly after their marriage by the Rev. Asa Dunham of the Bethel Presbyterian Church, Thomas and his bride, together with his mother, Margaret, moved to the White Deer Valley in Northumberland County where he purchased two large tracts of land. His mother continued to live with her son and daughter-in-law until her death in 1807 or early 1808.

According to a printed account by a great-grandson of Thomas, Thomas Henry Silliman Schooley, (*Trails of our Fa-*

thers) the land which Thomas acquired was purchased from James Cascadden of Washington township on January 7, 1796 and consisted of two tracts, originally surveyed for Reuben Haines and James Cascadden. This land is further described as lying on the north and south sides of the south branch of White Deer Hole Creek. Thomas S. Schooley further states that it was "on the north side of this creek that Capt. Thomas built for himself a very substantial stone house, with 18-inch thick walls where he lived out his life and reared his family."

According to one writer the White Deer Hole Valley, north of South White Deer Mountain, was as commonly called the White Deer Valley as was the White Deer Creek Valley on the south side of the mountain which was the original White Deer Valley. After the purchase of Indian land in 1768 these two valleys were included in Berks County. When Northumberland County was created in 1772, both valleys became a part of this new county and were included at first in Buffalo township. In 1776 they became a part of the new White Deer township.

The extent of the original White Deer township is shown in a brief history of this township which the writer found in the Easton Public Library which states that the original White Deer township "was set off from Buffalo township in 1776 by a line beginning at the upper side of Buffalo Creek, at its mouth; thence up the same to the northeast branch of the head thereof; thence, by a straight line to the four-mile tree, on Reuben Haines' road, on the line of Potters township (and) all the area north of a somewhat circuitous line from the point of Buffalo Creek, northward to the West Branch of the Susquehanna. (All this territory) became White Deer township—named after its principal stream." This account further states, in regard to the original name of the Valley and township that, "It is traditional that there were a number of albino white deer found in the (original) White Deer Valley and mountain." This beautiful valley which is seventeen miles long, with an average width of eight miles, has been described as extremely fertile and noted for its excellent farms and its

Charming surrounding scenery.

In August 1785 the White Deer Hole Valley became a part of the new township of Washington, which was erected by decree of the court of Northumberland County on August 23, 1785. Thus it was in this township that Thomas and Mary settled in 1795. The Census of 1800 and also 1810 positively identify Thomas as a resident of Washington township. Moreover, it is definitely known that his younger brother, Alexander, who had preceded him to Northumberland County was living in Washington township in 1790 when he obtained a warrant on January 22, 1790 for 150 acres of land. He was still living in Washington township sixteen years later when he sold the same tract of land on May 19, 1806 (Deed Book 2, p. 660, Recorder's Office, Sunbury, Pa.)

Thus Thomas and Alexander may have lived fairly close to each other since another deed shows that on March 1, 1796 Thomas sold one hundred and twenty-five acres of land in "Washington township to his brother Alexander for and in consideration of the sum of three hundred and ninety pounds lawful money." A receipt (still in the possession of a descendant of Thomas) dated March 1, 1796, acknowledges a first payment of one hundred pounds. On February 10, 1813 Thomas repurchased this land after Alexander had decided to move to Beaver County. Thomas gave three separate promissory notes, the first one for one hundred and sixteen dollars to be paid on May 1, 1814, the second payable on the same date one year later, and the final amount to be paid on May 1, 1816. It is not known whether this land was a part of the land Thomas had purchased on January 7, 1796 from James Cascadden or whether it may have been land owned jointly or by Thomas himself prior to his arrival in Washington township.

On September 6, 1811 Thomas and Mary gave a deed to James Edmiston for land which they owned in Lower Mount Bethel. Thomas is again described as being from Washington township, Northumberland County. This deed, in consideration of \$2,000 conveyed title of fifty acres given to Mary by her

father, Garret Middaugh, in his will dated December 27, 1804 and probated in 1810. An equal part of this joint property had been given to his other daughter, Elizabeth, the wife of James Edmiston. Garret Middaugh had died at his home in Lower Mount Bethel on July 12, 1810.

Thomas continued to prosper and to enjoy his comfortable and well-built home until his death on October 6, 1838 at the age of eighty-one. His wife, Mary, had died on April 30, 1835. They are both buried in the old log Washington Presbyterian Church Cemetery. The site of this original Washington Presbyterian Church is now located in Brady township, between Elimsport and Allenwood and just across the Union County border in Lycoming County.

In 1795 the vast area of Northumberland County north of the Muncy Hills and South White Deer Mountain became Lycoming County, and most of the area of Washington township was included in this new county. However, in the interest of clarity it must be stated that many residents in the years 1795-1813 were not at all sure whether they lived in Lycoming or in Northumberland County.

In 1813 Union County was formed out of all of Northumberland County west of the Susquehanna river, and the White Deer township was included in this new county. In 1861 Washington township was divided; the eastern section, named Gregg, was returned to Union County, and a small section called Brady township remained in Lycoming County.

Thus the land Thomas owned along the White Deer Hole Creek is now in Lycoming County approximately two miles south-east of Elimsport and the church that Thomas and his brother, Alexander, and their families attended is now in Brady township, Lycoming County, four miles north-west of Allenwood. This original (Old Log) Washington Presbyterian Church was the first church to be erected in the Washington township area.¹ It was erected some time between 1787 and

¹ The first Presbyterian church west of the Susquehanna was the Buffalo (Cross Roads) church, a log church built in 1775. It was south of the White Deer Valley and just west of the present day Lewisburg.

1790. It had a gallery on three sides and a high pulpit with a sounding board above it. The pews were high-backed as high as the heads of the worshippers. There was an open fireplace in front of the pulpit.¹

For years this was the only church in the entire White Deer Valley. In 1845 it was turned over to the Lutheran and Reformed congregations. These two congregations continued to worship in this church until 1847 at which time the old church was torn down and a stone building was begun on the same site with a part of the building materials from the old log church. The cornerstone of the new church (later to be known as the Old Stone Church), was laid on September 21, 1847. The church was completed and dedicated in the summer of 1848.

After the Old Log Church was turned over to the Lutheran and Reformed congregations, the Presbyterians moved their place of worship to a new site two miles north of Allenwood. This church continued to be known as the Washington Presbyterian Church until 1940, when it merged with another Presbyterian congregation in Allenwood and became the Washington Presbyterian Church of Allenwood, Penna.

The old cemetery, organized by the Washington Presbyterian church shortly after 1787, was located on ground presented to the church by John Brown, who was an elder of this church. When the Old Log Church was sold to the German Lutherans, one of the conditions of the sale was that the Lutherans would keep the burial ground in good order and "the graves of the Presbyterians neatly trimmed."²

This cemetery, one of the oldest in the area, contains the remains of many pioneers of both the White Deer and the White Deer Hole Valleys, the Indian fighters, and the soldiers of the Revolution. Many of these settlers were sturdy Scotch-Irish Presbyterians "who have left their impress on the County

¹ J. A. Richter, "The Old Stone Church", *The White Deer Yearbook for 1910*.

² John F. Meginness, *History of Lycoming County* (1872), p. 590.

where they located.”¹ Thus it was fitting that Capt. Thomas and his wife should find their final resting place in this cemetery.

Thomas and Mary were survived by their two sons, Thomas and Alexander, and by thirteen grandchildren.

2. Thomas and Mary Owen Snoddey

Thomas Silliman, the eldest son of Capt. Thomas and Mary Middaugh, was born on August 29, 1799 in the White Deer Valley. Thomas' first wife, Mary Owen Snoddey, was also born in the White Deer Valley and died on Oct. 22, 1831 at the age of thirty-four. In 1845, Thomas was elected Justice of the Peace for Washington township, a position which he held for ten years. His second wife, Margaret Ellis, died in 1868. Thomas and Margaret had a daughter Jane. Thomas remained a widower until his death in 1887. He was buried in the old Washington Presbyterian Church Cemetery. His daughter Jane is also buried in this same cemetery. A deed dated September 2, 1882 shows that Thomas conveyed to his daughter Jane “my housekeeper for more than 20 years—14 acres in Washington township and 24 acres of woodland.”

The children of Thomas and Mary Owen Silliman, all born in the White Deer Valley, were:

Louisa, born Sept. 23, 1821; died 1892;

married John Smith Laird

Margaret, married Jacob Fesler in 1852; moved to Illinois

James, died in Louisiana during the Civil War

Catherine, born Nov. 22, 1828

married William S. McCormick

Mary Snoddey, born March 16, 1827; died July 26, 1898,

married March 25, 1858, Andrew Jackson Schooley

Mary Snoddey Silliman and Andrew Jackson Schooley were married at the residence of her father, Thomas Silliman

¹ *Ibid.*

of Washington township by the Rev. Mathew B. Patterson, then pastor of the Washington Presbyterian Church of which the Sillimans had long been members.

Andrew Jackson Schooley was born on May 13, 1815 at the Schooley homestead on Schooley Hill, between Elmsport and Allenwood in Washington township. He died on Jan. 18, 1892. Both he and his wife are buried in the White Deer Baptist Church Cemetery.

Andrew and Mary had five daughters and one son. Their only son, Thomas Henry Silliman Schooley, who was born on July 28, 1860, married Mable Bedell Nichols of Pueblo, Colorado on March 9, 1889. Mable was the only child of Franklin Cass and Harriet Bedell Nichols. Thomas and Mable were married by the pastor of the First Baptist Church, and after their marriage they continued to live in Pueblo until 1903.

Thomas began his career as a public school teacher in Washington township at the age of 18. In 1882 he graduated from Bucknell Academy at Lewisburg, Pa. For the next few years he served as the principal of a "grammar" school in Lewisburg, and at the same time he continued to study at Bucknell. Then for two years he studied law in the office of the Hon. J. Merrill Linn. On July 1, 1886 he was admitted to membership of the Bar of Union County.

Following the advice of Horace Greeley to "go west young man," Thomas moved to Colorado in 1886 and obtained a position in a law office in Denver. In December he went to Pueblo where he engaged in the practice of law in the office of the Hon. A. B. Patton. In June 1889 he formed a partnership with another man in establishing a realty and insurance brokerage business. Later he became a member of the Pueblo Board of Trade and Secretary of the Pueblo Mining Stock Exchange of which he was one of the organizers and incorporators. In Jan. 1893 he was unanimously elected by the State Board of Commissioners as its legal adjuster and appraiser of state-owned lands.

Immediately following the blowing up of the Maine,

Thomas became a recruiting officer for the Colorado National Guard which was later to constitute a part of the First Colorado Regiment sent to the Philippines in 1899 to quell the Philippine Insurrection and guerrilla warfare led by Gen. Aguinaldo. Thomas himself was, on April 1, 1899, commissioned by the Governor of Colorado as a "Colonel and the Governor's Aide-de-camp." He was later to serve as a member of the State Board of Pardons.

In March, 1903 he moved to Detroit where he opened an office in the Majestic Building. There he bought a home on Vermont Avenue. By 1910 he owned considerable property.

In politics, he was an Independent, but in Colorado he had been a member of the Union Republican Club of Denver. In 1912 he helped organize the Progressive Party of Michigan and was a strong supporter of ex-President Theodore Roosevelt. He himself was the party's nominee for the state senate in the fourth district of Detroit.

He was a member of the Masonic Order, including the Scottish Rite and Mystic Shrine. He was also a member of the Patriotic Order of the Knights of Pythias, both in Denver and Detroit. As a direct descendant of Capt. Thomas he became a member of the National Society of the Sons of the American Revolution. Likewise, he was a member of the Michigan Historical Society and a Deacon of a Detroit Congregational Church.

When he died in Detroit on August 24, 1946, he was survived by three sons: Arnold T. Schooley; Nichols B. Schooley; and Cameron O. Schooley.

Thomas Henry Silliman Schooley was proud of his Silliman name and heritage and always used his full name or the abbreviated signature, T. H. Silliman Schooley. He was indeed a worthy descendant of his great-grandparents, Capt. Thomas and Mary Middaugh.

3. Alexander and Jane Foresman

Alexander Silliman, the second son of Capt. Thomas and Mary Middaugh, was born in the White Deer Valley, Washing-

ton township in 1801. In 1822 he married Jane Foresman. Jane, born on October 1, 1803, was the daughter of Samuel Foresman who had fought in the Revolution and who died in Washington township on April 22, 1825. Jane's grandfather, Robert Foresman, was born in North Ireland in 1724 and shortly after this date her great-grandfather, Hugh, moved to Pennsylvania, thus becoming one of the early Forks of the Delaware settlers. Both Hugh and his son, Robert, are buried in the old Presbyterian Cemetery near Martin's Creek just north of Easton, Pa.

Alexander and Jane Foresman Silliman had six sons: Thomas, born 1823; Samuel, born 1825; Joseph B.; James, born 1829; Arthur, born 1831; and Alexander; and two daughters, Mary Jane, born 1833, and Sarah E., born 1842.

In 1847 Alexander and Jane, with their large family of eight children, moved by covered wagons from Washington township, Pa. to Three Rivers, Michigan. They were accompanied by Edwin Carrier and John Foresman together with their families. Before going on to Michigan, they stopped for a few months at Dorr Prairie in Indiana. When they arrived at Three Rivers, they found a small settlement of houses surrounded by "a fine timber land of oak, hickory, quaking aspen, and with very little underbrush."

Alexander and Jane continued to live in Three Rivers until the death of Alexander in 1852 and of Jane in 1869. Little is known about their children except that "in the early fifties the Silliman brothers, James and Samuel, established a pump factory in the Third ward, where the waterworks building now stands."

It is also recorded that the younger brother of James and Samuel, "Arthur Silliman, one of the older pioneer residents, was born in White Deer Valley, Pa. on Aug. 4, 1831. In 1861, he married Mary E. Stoufer, (1840-1924), who was also one of the pioneer settlers, coming with her father, William Stoufer, in 1846 from Columbia County, Pa. and settling in Park

Township.”¹

Arthur died at Three Rivers, Michigan in 1916. He was a prominent 32° Mason for nearly fifty years. He and his wife, Mary Elizabeth Stoufer Silliman, had three children: Frank Arthur, born in 1862; Minnie Luella, born in 1864 and died in 1872; and Sue Imogene, born May 16, 1870

Miss Sue I. Silliman born in McLean County, Ill., was for many years and up until the time of her death on June 29, 1945, the Librarian of the Three Rivers Public Library. She also served for a time as the secretary of the Michigan D.A.R.

Frank Arthur Silliman, the only brother of Sue Imogene, married Ester Reeve in 1888 and later moved to Wisconsin. Their children were: Harold A., born in 1889; Gertrude B., born in 1891; Grant Dana, born in 1895; and Marion E.

¹ *History of St. Joseph County, Michigan.*

CHAPTER VII

JAMES AND MARY HUNTER

1. Life in Northumberland and Erie Counties

James, the second son of Alexander and Margaret and a younger brother of Capt. Thomas, was born in Lower Mount Bethel on May 9, 1760. The first official Revolutionary War record that positively identifies him shows that in 1780, at the age of twenty, he was serving on the frontier, in the 5th Co. of the 5th Northampton Battalion, under Capt. Patrick Campbell, as were his brothers, Thomas and John.

His name also appears on two separate payrolls of Capt. John Lyle's Company for May and July 1781 with an interesting notation attached—in the expedition "after the Indians." In 1782 he was still serving under Capt. Campbell, and a final record dated May 21, 1784, shows that he was still attached to the 5th Battalion, but his company was under Captain John Brown. Records also show that at the end of the war he drew depreciation pay for "services on the frontier."

He was the first of the four brothers to move to Northumberland County. His name does not appear in the Lower Mount Bethel records which lists his three brothers, Thomas, John and Alexander, as having paid taxes in 1786 as single men. The 1790 Census lists both James and his brother John as residents of Northumberland County. However, the census merely shows that James and John were living together somewhere in Northumberland County and that both were still single. A more helpful record states that James was taxable in Milton in 1790 which would indicate that James had settled on the eastern side of the West Branch of the Susquehanna. Still more valuable is a land deed recorded in Sanbury (Deed Book D. p. 532) which shows that on April 24, 1790 James purchased from John Gray and his wife a tract of land called "Secretaria," containing 130

acres, situated at the head of Chillequaue Creek in Northumberland County. This locates the land as near the old Derry Presbyterian Church about four miles northeast of Washingtonville. John Gray had purchased this same land from James Tilghman in 1774.

Having purchased this land on which he still owed a mortgage of 90 pounds, James was now ready to establish a real home of his own. On May 5, 1791 he married Mary Hunter, the daughter of James and Elizabeth Hunter, in the Derry Presbyterian Church.¹ Their home was on the east side of the West Branch of the Susquehanna river and approximately fifteen miles due east of the White Deer Valley which was on the west side of the same river.

James and Mary continued to live on this farm where six of their children were born, until at least May 17, 1802 at which time their 130 acres of land were sold to the Rev. John B. Patterson of Derry township. (Deed Book M, p. 488 Sunbury Pa.)

Shortly after this date James and Mary and their children left Northumberland County in a covered wagon for a new home in Northeast Erie County in the extreme northwestern part of the state and less than twelve miles north of the present city of Erie.

Fortunately their journey and early days in a new land can be reconstructed from four letters written by James, himself, between 1802 and 1815 to his mother, Margot, and to his brother, Capt. Thomas. These letters were written on good parchment and in very fine and clear writing.

The first letter addressed to his mother was dated August 13, 1802 and was from Greenfield township, Erie County. It

¹ The Derry Church was one of the original congregations of the Presbytery of Northumberland which was officially organized in 1811. One of the early pastors of this church was the Rev. John B. Patterson, ordained and installed at Mahoning and Derry in 1799. John B. Patterson was still the pastor of the Derry congregation in 1811. Roy F. Miller. "The Presbytery of Northumberland." *Proceedings*, (The Northumberland County Historical Society) Vol. XXIV, pp. 64 and 66.

started out by informing his "Loving Mother and Brothers" (Thomas and Alexander) that his family were all in good health and hoping his letter would find them in the "same state." Then he informed them that he and his family had arrived at their "new Habitation" in four weeks and one day after they had started their journey. All had remained well on the trip except his oldest daughter, Nancy, who had been troubled by sick headaches. Their worst trouble had been in running after the "creatures" (their stock and sheep), but all had arrived safely except "two sheep that got poisoned and one the wagon killed." Their only real difficulty along the way was getting for their horses and stock, food which "was scarce and dear." The wheat he had to purchase for feed was one dollar and a quarter (per bushel) while corn had cost a dollar.

Apparently he had arrived with enough seed potatoes and wheat to plant his first crops. However, the squirrels, wild geese, and turkeys had greatly damaged the wheat, and the five bushels of potatoes he had planted on July 5 and 6 had been damaged by a drought. They had had no rain from the time the potatoes were planted until the 30th of July; yet they had already harvested a "patch of turnips" and some flax. Apparently his wife was not too happy. "Mary says she isn't satisfied and wonders what entices people to come to nothing. . . but as for me I am better satisfied than I expected." He adds, however, that there were many things yet to be put in order and that it would take some time since "so many things are wanting."

This letter which was carried by a friend returning to the White Deer Valley, was signed "Your dutiful son and daughter, James and Mary."

The next letter which has been preserved is dated June 20, 1807 and was to his brother Thomas in Washington township. It began, "Loving Mother, Brother and Sister. I am glad of the opportunity of writing you and letting you know our welfare. We are in good health at present Blessed Be God for his mercies. John McCurley brought us word of mother being unwell when he left you." Then he adds that his own wife, Mary,

"was very unwell through the winter."

Then he makes a special appeal for either Thomas or his brother, Alexander, to try and collect from Mr. Patterson the three hundred and fifty dollars he still owed on the land he had purchased in 1802. James needed the money because of a fifty-four dollar doctor's bill he had to pay for his wife and children. He had to give a "cow and twenty bushels of wheat to pay this bill." Further bad luck had plagued him in the loss of a mare, and he would need "twenty dollars in money the first of September for another to keep the plow going." He had himself expected to make a trip back to Northumberland County in the early spring but his hay crop had been poor and food for his animals was scarce. Furthermore, he had thought it best to take care of them himself. To make matters worse, two of his mares were "heavy with foal" and he had no suitable "creatures" to drive on the journey. Last, but not least, his own wife had not been well prior to the birth on the second of May of a "fine thriving child" (William). The rest of the children were "all in a thriving prosperous state." He ends his letter by stating that he had nothing more to write about but "the sending of our love." Mary and her two oldest children were sending their love to granny (Margot) and Aunt Mary and "give my love to Alexander and Mary (Brown) and all the children and to Charley Brown's family and all inquiring friends."

The third letter, dated May 13, 1811, is from North East township, Erie County and is addressed to his brother, Thomas. His mother was, of course, no longer living. Again he refers to his brother, Alexander, who had just written him about the possibility of selling his land to Thomas. Then he suggests that if Thomas might need some extra money to pay Alexander, he might call on the Rev. Mr. Patterson and get what he could from him if the "money would be of any particular advantage to Alexander or yourself." It was evident that this was one way he could eventually get his money from John Patterson. He was still expecting to make a trip back to Northumberland County and counselled them to have a "warm pot of cider ready" when he arrived.

The last letter, again addressed to Capt. Thomas, is dated April 20, 1815. In this letter James refers to his sister, Isabel Morrison. He also mentions his old friends, Charles and William Brown. He further states that he has nothing particular to write about except that his youngest son (William) "lay all last summer with white swelling in his leg several pieces of the bone rotted and came out but it appears to be nearly well." He complains about not hearing from any of them for so long a period of time. He would especially like to hear "from Sister Isabel and her family." Again he sends his regards to Charles and William Brown and to "all inquiring friends."

He speaks of his new house and expresses the wish that Thomas and Mary and their family might drop in on them some evening when "the nights are somewhat long and drink some cider and eat a piece of Jonny cake and smoke a pipe of tobacco and give us some of your friendly chat."

By 1815 James and Mary were no longer worried about money. Their crops were doing well, they had recently built a new home, and perhaps even the Rev. Mr. Patterson may have improved his own financial standing.

It is significant that in none of these letters does James mention his brother, John, who was living with James in 1790 just prior to his marriage.

Mary Hunter, who was never too strong, did not live to enjoy her new home. She died on July 2, 1816 and was buried in the Oakhill Cemetery in North East Erie County, and James was buried by her side in this same cemetery after his death on August 13, 1841.

James and Mary Hunter Silliman had six sons and two daughters:

1. Nancy, born Northumberland County, January 21, 1792; died March 21, 1864; married Richard Cockran.
2. Alexander, born in Northumberland County, November 31, 1793; died February 2, 1871. Served in War of 1812.
3. James Hunter, born Northumberland County, November

- 1, 1795; died young.
4. Asa, born in Northumberland County, October 4, 1797.
Moved to Bellevue, Ohio.
5. Mary, born in Northumberland County, March 4, 1800;
married William Smith.
6. Thomas, born in Northumberland County, April 24, 1802.
7. John Lawrence, born in Erie County, July 5, 1804.
8. William, born in Erie County, May 2, 1807. Living in
Michigan in 1885.

2. Thomas Silliman

Thomas, the sixth child of James and Mary, was only six weeks old when his parents moved from Northumberland to Erie County in 1802. He grew up on the original farm obtained by his parents which was described in 1884 as a very fine farm near North East Village. It had been in the Silliman family for over 80 years.¹

Thomas was married in 1848 to Lena Jane Schultz, daughter of John Schultz. They had three sons: Henry L., born July 10, 1849, who married Belle Bort in 1878, and died in Pasadena, California in 1921; Frank, born in 1853, who married Alice Adams in 1879, served as Captain, North East police and died in 1909; and Fred born in 1857 and died in 1865.

Henry L. and Belle Bort were the parents of: Thomas, born March 7, 1879, served in the Spanish-American War; Lorenzo Bort, born March 8, 1880, died September 10, 1920; and George P. who married Mary Meyers in 1909.

George and Mary had a daughter Florence, born in October, 1909 and a son Thomas, born in San Francisco in 1912.

When Thomas Silliman died on July 9, 1890 at the age of eighty-eight, he was recognized as an unusually successful and highly respected farmer. He had built and lived in the first brick house in the township. He had held "most of the township offices" and had "always been a leading man in the

¹ *History of Erie County, Pa* , Warner, Beer and Co. (1884), p. 149.

township.”¹

His wife, Jane, who was born in 1829, died on January 8, 1912 and was buried beside her husband in the North East Cemetery.

3. John Lawrence Silliman

John Lawrence, the seventh child of James and Mary, was born in North East, Erie County on July 5, 1804. Like his brother Thomas, he was also a successful farmer. He was married on March 26, 1830 to Mary Ann Hamilton, who died prior to 1840. In 1841 he married Minerva Chapman who was born on September 10, 1819 and died in North East on June 2, 1848. John and Minerva had one son James E. and two daughters, Mary and Helen.

Mary was born on June 18, 1842 and died on June 12, 1921. Her husband, John K. Griffin, was a doctor. Mary's younger sister Helen was born on May 20, 1846, and was married on August 19, 1873 to Thomas R. Porter of California.

A. Dr. James E. Silliman

James E., the only son of John Lawrence and Minerva Chapman Silliman, was born in North East, Erie County, on June 10, 1844. He grew up on his father's farm, and at the age of 16 he had run barefoot across the fields to see a train passing through the town with a presidential candidate aboard by the name of Abraham Lincoln. Years later he spoke of this event as one of the greatest thrills of his life, and for the rest of his days he was a great admirer of Lincoln.

In late 1864 he enlisted, at the age of twenty, in the 102nd Pennsylvania Volunteers Infantry and served through the final months of the Civil War. After the war he finished his preparatory course and entered Allegheny College at Meadville where he graduated in 1871 with an A.B. degree. Later he obtained an M.A. degree from this same school and then entered

¹ *Ibid.*, p. 149.

the Jefferson Medical College in Philadelphia, graduating in 1874. He returned immediately to Erie and there began his practice of medicine. The following year he was elected coroner of Erie County and served in that capacity until 1881. On November 4, 1878 he married Hattie I. Mehaffey, daughter of Hugh R. Mehaffey.

In 1898 he again volunteered to serve his country by enlisting in the Third Regiment, Pennsylvania Volunteer Infantry as a surgeon major. At the close of the Spanish-American War he returned to his medical practice in Erie, but his interest in military affairs was maintained until his death. Following his graduation from medical school he had served as a peace time surgeon for the Second Pennsylvania Brigade, and in 1877 he had been named secretary of the Board of Examining Surgeons of Pensions. For many years he was the head of the Grand Army of the Republic in Erie County. As the commander of the Erie G.A.R. Post and as the annual grand marshal of the city's Memorial Day parade, he rode year after year at the head of the parade on a beautiful horse, still proudly wearing his old Civil War uniform. When he died in 1933, he was one of the last six Civil War survivors in Erie County. He was also a member of the Hoskinson Camp, United Spanish War Veterans.

Dr. Silliman was a man of many interests. He was an active member of the Erie County Medical Society, also a member of the Pennsylvania State Medical Society and of the American Medical Association. Furthermore, he was a thirty-second degree Mason and prominent in Masonic affairs. Moreover he was an officer in his church, and for many years he taught a Sunday School class. He was fond of poetry and a collector of mementos. A great many of these personal souvenirs and relics now repose in the Erie public museum.

In late November, 1932 Dr. Silliman suffered a stroke and was taken to St. Vincent's Hospital. A month later an Erie paper carried his picture and a three-column write-up under the heading "Well Known Churchman, Mason and Leader Wages Brave Fight for Life." The account told of his war experiences

and of his outstanding medical service to others. A week later, on January 4, 1933, Dr. Silliman quietly passed away.

His first wife, Hattie I. Mehaffey, had died on October 21, 1909. He was survived by his second wife, Mollie Ingraham Silliman. Two different Erie papers on the day of his death paid high tribute to him. One article under the headline, "Veteran Erie Physician-Surgeon Succumbs" began:

In countless Erie families, two and three generations were ushered into the world through his services, and older residents remember him as a familiar figure in his horse and buggy, ever ready to serve.

The second account, under the heading, "Brief Illness Proves Fatal to Medic Dean" began:

Dr. James E. Silliman, Erie's grand old physician, is dead. He was 88. The famed old man was Erie's oldest physician. He was known by thousands and had attended more thousands in his professional capacity. He "doctored" Erie since 1874 and was actively engaged in the pursuit of medicine until a month ago.

The pall bearers at his funeral were eight of the leading physicians of the city.

James was a worthy descendant of his pioneer grandparents, James and Mary Hunter Silliman. Like his grandfather he had served his country as a soldier, and as a beloved physician and surgeon he had rendered service beyond measure to the community in which he lived.

CHAPTER VIII

ALEXANDER AND MARY BROWN

1. New Frontiers

Alexander, the fourth son of Alexander and Margaret, was born in Lower Mount Bethel township, Northampton County, Pennsylvania, on April 17, 1764. There is a family tradition that the twelve-year-old Alexander assisted his mother, Margot, in carrying food to some of General Washington's men in late 1776 or early 1777.

Before the war had ended, Alexander himself was a soldier. His name appears on two official muster rolls of Capt. John Lyle's Company for May and July of 1781,¹ together with the names of his older brothers, Thomas and James. His name is also found on the muster roll of Capt. Lewis Stecher's Company for December 1, 1784 as being "now in service in Wyoming."

The next year he was serving in the 3rd Co., 6th Northampton Battalion. His name appears in a list "sworn to personally" by his brother, Captain Thomas, on May 9, 1785. In 1786 he is listed as a Lieutenant in a "General return of officers elected Spring of 1786," verified by Lt. Col. W. Henry La Wall.

Alexander was married on Sept. 20, 1787 to Mary Brown. It is believed that Mary was the daughter of Capt. John Brown. He is the only Brown listed in the Mount Bethel tax list for 1775, having been assessed for 200 acres of land, only 10 acres of which were cleared. Furthermore he was the only Brown living in the same township in 1790. It is also known that he moved to Washington township, Northumberland County sometime after 1790 and that he became an elder in the Old Log Presbyterian Church in Washington township.

¹ Penna. Archives, 5th. Series, Vol. XIII, pp. 605-606.

Alexander's war experiences on the frontier in the Wyoming Valley and upper West Branch of the Susquehanna river valley and its tributaries undoubtedly attracted him to this area of the country. Lower Mount Bethel tax records would indicate that he left Northampton County prior to 1788. He is listed as the head of a family and as living in Northumberland County in 1790. However, no township is named.

A Northumberland County land record shows that he obtained on Jan. 22, 1790 a warrant for 150 acres in Derry township, where his brother James was then living. However, Alexander himself is recorded as living at this time in Washington township, White Deer Valley, and there is no evidence that he ever lived anywhere else in Northumberland County except in that township. If he ever contemplated moving to Derry, he gave up the idea, for on May 19, 1806, he sold the same tract of land in Derry township to James Scott. Alexander is again recorded as a resident of Washington township. (Sunbury Recorder's Office-Book 2, p. 660). He was still living in Washington township at the time of the 1810 Census, as was his brother Capt. Thomas.

After Capt. Thomas was married in 1795 and had moved to Washington township, he purchased from James Cascadden on Jan. 7, 1796 two large tracts of land in Washington township. Another deed dated March 1, 1796 shows that Alexander purchased from his brother, Thomas, one hundred and twenty-five acres for the purchase price of "three hundred and ninety pounds lawful money." On Feb. 10, 1813, Thomas repurchased this same land from Alexander.

It is not known how much land Alexander may have acquired by 1796, but it is quite probable that he was instrumental in influencing Capt. Thomas to settle permanently in the White Deer Valley, and he may have helped him secure the land which Thomas had purchased from James Cascadden.

Early in 1814, having disposed of their property in Northumberland County, Alexander and Mary, with their family of six children, moved across the Allegheny mountains to Beaver

(now Lawrence) County. Their original farm was in the Enon Valley approximately 40 miles northwest of Pittsburgh and near the present village of New Galilee.

The region in which they settled was truly a new frontier, with large areas still a veritable wilderness in 1814. The Enon Valley a beautiful and charming valley runs from the Ohio-Pennsylvania line on the west to the village of New Galilee on the east, and north to the present-day city of New Castle. New Galilee, to this day a small village of less than six hundred inhabitants, contained only a few settlers in 1814 and even New Castle, fourteen miles northeast of the Enon Valley, was nothing more than a small village.

By 1756 the present New Castle area had become the chief village and trading center of the Delaware Indians of western Pennsylvania, after their Kitanniny settlement had been destroyed by Captain John Armstrong. In 1798 John Stewart, one of the first white settlers in the New Castle area, set up a furnace for making pig iron and named the settlement after the English industrial city of Newcastle. The town was actually laid out in 1802 and incorporated as a borough in 1825.

Other settlers continued to move into the valley. The land which Alexander and Mary had obtained was soon cleared and put into production, with the help of Alexander's three older sons who would soon marry and have homes of their own.

Mary died on Oct. 11, 1833 and Alexander died on Sept. 18, 1846. Both are buried in an old cemetery between the Enon Valley and New Castle. The grave of Alexander is decorated by a Sons of the American Revolution marker.

Alexander and Mary Brown Silliman had four sons and two daughters:

1. Thomas, born Sept. 16, 1791; died in New Galilee, Dec. 22, 1879.
2. Charles, born in 1793; died in New Galilee, Sept. 11, 1878.
3. Alexander, born Nov. 28, 1797; died in Ohio, June

16, 1861.

4. Jane, born abt. 1798; died in 1861. Married John Buck.
5. Isabella, born Oct. 19, 1800; died June 2, 1833. Married James Stewart.
6. Samuel, born abt. 1802-3. Never married..

2. Thomas and Mary Davidson

Thomas, the eldest son of Alexander and Mary Brown Silliman, was born in Washington township, Northumberland County on December 17, 1791 and moved with his parents, when he was twenty-three years old, to Enon Valley in what was then Beaver (now Lawrence) County, Pa. Within a year after his arrival in the Enon Valley, Thomas was married to Mary Davidson, the daughter of William Davidson, Jr. and his wife, Mary Aiken Ramsey. Mary Davidson was born on July 17, 1792. The Davidsons had settled near New Galilee, in the Enon Valley in 1794. Their farm was near that of Alexander and Mary Brown. Thomas and Mary were married in the Davidson home, and shortly after their marriage they moved to a farm of their own, still near both of their parents and also near New Galilee. This farm eventually became very valuable property, and they were later to own a comfortable brick house made of clay from their own farm.

Besides being a prosperous farmer Thomas also taught for a time in a nearby country school. A letter which he wrote on June 25, 1875, addressed to his cousin Thomas (son of Capt. Thomas) who was still living in Washington township, reveals that Thomas was well educated and that his mind at the age of eighty-four was still clear and active. He inquired about various persons he had known as a young man in Washington township, and he was especially interested in knowing about his Brown cousins and their children.

Thomas was a devout Presbyterian. When the Old Covenant Church in the Valley split in the 1830's over the issue of suffrage the Sillimans and Davidsons, and especially politically-minded Thomas, joined with other progressives in the building

of a new church which they called The Reformed Presbyterian Church. Thomas was noted for his long and ardent prayers, but he was even a more ardent Republican. In his old age he was constantly threatening to "cane" all the Democrats. In fear that he might carry out his threat, his daughters did their best to keep him away from all political meetings.

His bitter feeling against the Democrats may have been strengthened by the experiences of two of his daughters, Jamina and Margaret Louise Silliman, both school teachers who went South after the Civil War to teach for two years in a Negro school, but even educational missionaries were unwelcome there at that time, and they were ostracized by the native whites and thus their experiences in the South were not too pleasant.

Thomas died in New Galilee on December 23, 1879 at the age of eighty-eight. His wife Mary died on August 1, 1881. Both are buried in the White Church Cemetery in New Galilee. Thomas and Mary Davidson Silliman were the parents of nine daughters and one son:

1. Maria, married James Frazier
2. Lydia Jane, born New Galilee, June 22, 1817; died October 12, 1838. Married James Hamill
3. Isabelle, born Little Beaver township, March 30, 1819; died February 14, 1911; m. 1843 Joseph Wilson
4. Cynthia, born 1824; died 1912; unmarried.
5. Martha, born July 4, 1822; died 1913 in Lincoln, Nebraska; m. Miller McKim
6. Minerva, born 1825; died November 22, 1913 in Little Beaver township; m. Hunter Russell
7. Jamina, born November 5, 1829; died February 19, 1885; unmarried
8. Margaret Louise, born March 5, 1835; died July 16, 1882
9. Mary Angelina, born 1838; died November 20, 1904 in Topeka, Kansas
10. William Brown, died in infancy

A. Lydia Jane Silliman Hamill

Lydia Jane was the second daughter of Thomas and Mary Davidson. She was born in the Enon Valley on June 22, 1817, and grew up on her father's farm which was located about three miles from the village of New Galilee. She was married at the home of her parents on October 12, 1838 to James Hamill, who was born on August 8, 1813 on the Enon Valley farm of his parents, John and Rosanna Davidson Hamill.

James became a very successful farmer, and the old Hamill Farm was to remain in the possession of the family for over a hundred years. It was located two miles east of the Ohio-Penna. border, across from Petersburg, Ohio and about twelve miles southeast of New Castle. One of the barns of James Hamill was used prior to the Civil War as an "Underground Railroad" station or stopping place for run-away Negro slaves on their way farther north or to Canada. These ex-slaves arrived in the night, spent the next day sleeping in the barn hay loft, and the following night James himself drove them in a covered wagon to the next station across the Ohio state line.

On October 12, 1888 James and Lydia Jane celebrated their 50th wedding anniversary on their farm. Lydia Jane died four years later, on May 2, 1892 and James died a month later, on June 7, 1892. Both are buried in the Bethel United Presbyterian Churchyard in the Enon Valley.

Lydia Jane and James Hamill had nine children: seven daughters and two sons. Their son William Brown Hamill was born on December 14, 1854 and died on the Old Hamill farm in the Enon Valley on December 25, 1937. The second son, Thomas B. Hamill, was born on the Old Hamill farm on April 22, 1862 and died in San Diego, California on August 8, 1888. Their daughters were: Mary Hamill, born April 1, 1840; Rosanna Hamill, born April 20, 1842; Isabella Hamill, born July 2, 1844; Martha Jane Hamill, born October 20, 1846; Minerva Sophrona Hamill, born May 4, 1849; Anna Louise Hamill, born September 18, 1852; and Estella Serepta Hamill, born January 25, 1858.

Mary Hamill Crawford

Mary Hamill, the eldest child of Lydia Jane and James Hamill, was born on the farm of her parents in the Enon Valley, on April 1, 1840. She was married at the home of her parents on Christmas Day 1860 to Robert Miller Crawford, the only son of David and Jane Miller Crawford, and a great-great-grandson of Robert Lyle and also of Alexander Miller of Northampton County, Penna. Robert Miller Crawford was born near New Galilee on March 17, 1836.

After their marriage Mary Hamill and Robert Crawford moved to a farm of their own not too far from the Hamill farm, where they set up housekeeping in a small log house. Their married life was destined to be brief for on December 21, 1863 Robert was killed in action during the Civil War. He is buried in the Danville National Cemetery at Stone River, Tennessee.

His young widow, who was only twenty-three years old at the time of her husband's death, was left with two young daughters to raise and support—Mary Jane Crawford born on May 8, 1862 and Sylvia Luemma Crawford, who was born on August 28, 1863. Her government pension as a Civil War widow amounted to only eight dollars a month. She gave up the farm and returned to the home of her parents, James and Lydia Jane Hamill. She sought self-employment and when her daughters were old enough to go to school, she sent them to a school near Mercer, Pa. When they finished the school there, the two girls were sent to a State Normal School in Slippery Rock, Pa., where they graduated and received lifetime teaching certificates. Mary herself had always wanted to be a teacher and had accompanied them to Slippery Rock where she was again self-employed.

Both of her daughters taught school for a time in Lawrence County. After the marriage of her older daughter, Mary Jane Crawford to James Mellville Walker in May 1885, Mary lived with the Walkers for a time and after the Walker family moved to Colorado, she also applied for and obtained a home-

stead in the same area; yet she continued to live with the Walker family, with occasional visits to her second daughter in Omaha. Her later years, however, were spent with her daughter, Sylvia in Omaha, where she died on December 3, 1922. She is buried in Sterling, Colorado. Her daughter Sylvia had married Clinton Franklin in April 1892 and continued to live in Omaha until her death on February 22, 1940. Sylvia Franklin is also buried in Sterling, Colorado.

Mary Jane Walker

Mary Jane, born in the Enon Valley on May 8, 1862, was the older daughter of Mary Hamill and Robert Miller Crawford. When she was barely two years old, her father was killed during the Civil War. After her graduation from the State Normal School at Slippery Rock, Pa., she taught school in Lawrence County. As was the practice in country schools of the day, the young school marm boarded with the "scholars", living a week at a time in a different home. However, this did not last long, for on May 6, 1885 Mary was married to James Mellville Walker. The wedding took place at the farm home of her grandparents, James and Lydia Jane (Silliman) Hamill.

James Mellville Walker was born in Allegheny County, Penna., on May 3, 1860. When James was seventeen his parents, James Glenn and Martha Bell Walker, had moved to Lawrence County and had obtained a large farm quite near the James Hamill farm. There James continued to live up to the time of his marriage. After their marriage James and Mary Jane set up their own home on a farm adjoining his father's land, which James G. Walker had given to the young couple as a wedding gift.

James Mellville Walker was a better musician than a farmer. He had a pleasing tenor voice and was a good violinist as well, and he spent considerable time in organizing evening "singing schools" in the nearby country school houses. Moreover, his home was always open to Presbyterian ministers, and students from the Pittsburgh-Xenia Theological Seminary in Pittsburgh were visitors in the summer time. Even James

Mellville himself would leave the summer work to the hired help, so that he could study music for several weeks under some well-known professor at Lake Chautauqua.

In 1897 James M. Walker decided to give up farming, and he with his large family moved to East Palestine, Ohio, where he taught music in the public schools and was the choir director of the United Presbyterian Church and apparently a good director, for in 1935, James K. Quay, a United Presbyterian missionary in Cairo, Egypt, in a letter written back to the East Palestine Presbyterian Church, wrote, "It was there that I used to sit in the pew with my young mother and my little brother and listen with awe while the choir, under the leadership of Prof. Walker delivered itself of one of Herbert's anthems. They sang the book pretty well through, but they had some favorites that turned up frequently so that I learned them by heart and could sing them with little practice years later when I joined the choir." James M. Walker was a real pioneer in the field of public school music, but the salary of a music teacher in those days was even less than that which other teachers might expect to receive, while choir directors could expect little or nothing at all.

Finally, to make a better living for his family, he became a traveling salesman for the William S. George Pottery Company, and in 1903 he moved his family to Pittsburgh where he became connected with the Boggs and Buhl Company. Still later he moved to Duquesne and in 1908 to Colorado where he applied for and received a homestead in Logan County.

However, bad luck continued to plague him. On his way west he had bought a lot of expensive farm equipment and eight farm horses in Omaha, Nebraska. Either the high Colorado altitude or the climate did not agree with the horses, for in a short time they all died.

The homestead, as described by Sylvia Walker Caven, was a very lonely place. No other house could be seen on the flat country. The nearest post office and store where mail might be expected twice a week was five miles away. On a road that skirted the horizon when a lone horseback rider might oc-

casionally be seen, one of the Walker boys would then saddle his own horse and ride over and invite the traveler for dinner that they might see a strange face and get some news from the outside world. The most welcome visitor was the "once in a blue moon" United Presbyterian traveling minister.

In time other settlers moved in, but life continued to be difficult. In late 1928 James and Mary Jane returned to Lawrence County where James died in Beaver Falls on May 20, 1930. After the death of her husband, Mary Jane Walker returned west and made her home with her daughter, Sylvia Walker Caven, who was then living in Gering, Nebraska. She continued to be active in church work and taught a Sunday School class of elderly ladies for a number of years.

Mary Jane Crawford Walker died on January 1, 1946 at the age of eighty-three at a hospital in Scottsbluff, Nebraska, where she had gone for a serious operation. She is buried in the Walker lot in Sterling, Colorado. She was survived by four of her seven children: her daughter Sylvia; and three sons—Robert Glenn Walker, of New Galilee, Pa.; Mellville Carlisle Walker of Gary, Indiana; and Cecil Alexander Walker of Arkansas.

Sylvia Ellen Walker Caven

Sylvia, the oldest daughter of Mary Jane and James Mellville Walker, was born on her father's farm in the Enon Valley on September 10, 1891. She completed her grade school work in East Palestine, Ohio and graduated with honors in 1908 from the Duquesne High School, Duquesne, Pa. Shortly after her graduation, her parents moved to eastern Colorado, where they obtained a homestead twelve miles northwest of Sterling. In August she took the Colorado State teachers' examination in Julesburg, and in the fall of the same year she was employed as a country school teacher, near Holyoke, Colorado at a salary of forty dollars a month. She was just seventeen at the time. Two summers were spent taking education courses in the State Normal School in Greeley, Colorado. She continued to teach until 1912 at which time she went to Omaha, Nebraska to live

with her mother's only sister, Sylvia Crawford Franklin. While in Omaha she was employed in the general freight office of the Union Pacific Railroad.

In 1914, finding office work and the long hours in those days rather strenuous, she returned to live with her parents in Colorado, where she continued to teach school until 1917. In the meantime, to earn extra money to help her parents she worked during the summer months in the County Treasurer's Office in Sterling "figuring out" tax records.

Because of the shortage of manpower during World War I the cashier of the Sterling National Bank, knowing that she had worked in the County Treasurer's Office, went to her country school to persuade her to accept a position in his bank. She refused to break her contract but agreed to accept the position at the end of the school term. When she began working in this bank, she was one of two women, the other thirteen employees being men. At the end of the war there were thirteen women employees and two men, the elderly president and the cashier. Sylvia herself had virtually become the assistant cashier.

Her banking career was ended by her marriage on June 19, 1920 to Albert James Caven, the son of John and Elizabeth Smith Caven. Albert was born in South Hadley Falls, Mass. At the outbreak of the war he had been employed as a salesman by Armour and Company in Spokane, Washington. Enlisting on July 19, 1917 at Fort Wright he served overseas in Company O, 10th Engineers and also in the 35th Company, 20th Engineers. He served for eighteen months in France but was badly gassed, and he also had the flu and rheumatic fever from which his lungs never fully recovered. Thus he was honorably discharged in February, 1919, at Camp Funston, Kansas.

After their marriage Sylvia and Albert Caven began house-keeping thirteen miles east of Sterling, in Iliff, Colorado where Albert was employed in 1919 as the assistant manager of the Sterling Lumber and Investment Company. In 1921 he became manager. Mrs. Caven went back to school teaching and also helped out with the book work in the Iliff State Bank after

school hours and on Saturdays. By this time they had saved enough money to make a substantial down-payment on a store of their own in Gering, Nebraska. They moved there in 1926, and the store they purchased became the Caven Hardware Store. Mrs. Caven no longer had any time for school teaching or for part-time bank work, for she found plenty to do in assisting her husband with the accounts of their own growing and successful store.

In 1932 Albert Caven was elected mayor of Gering and re-elected for a second term in 1934. Following the end of his second term the editor of the *Gering Courier* wrote, "While I didn't support Mayor Caven when he was elected to his first term, now that he is retiring, it is only fair to say that he has made an excellent officer and will go out of office with a popular verdict that he passed through one of the most difficult periods (1932-36) in the history of the town with ample credit."

The city records show that even during the Depression years Mayor Caven had been able to reduce the city's indebtedness by nearly one third, besides paying cash for improvements of city property, such as paved roads and the city parks. After his retirement as Mayor he was elected Vice-President and Secretary of the North Platte Valley Building and Loan Association in Gering.

He also continued to manage his hardware store until 1940, when due to poor health he decided to sell the store. However, he continued to serve as the acting secretary and appraiser of the Building and Loan Association up to 1948. He was then advised because of a heart condition to move to a place with a more even climate and at a much lower altitude, preferably sea level. The Cavens then moved to Portland, Oregon, on April 13, 1948 where Albert continued to live in complete retirement for another six years. He died in Portland on February 8, 1954 and is buried in the Walker lot in the Riverside Cemetery in Sterling, Colorado. At the time of his death he was a member of the Presbyterian Church in Portland, a Royal Arch Mason and a member of the American Legion and of the Veterans of Foreign Wars.

Sylvia Walker Caven continues to live in Portland where she is still active in church and club work. Before moving to Portland she had served as Matron of the Order of the Eastern Star in Gering; as a Regent of the Kalandin Chapter of the D.A.R. in Scottsbluff; President of the American Legion Auxiliary; and as State Vice-President of the American Legion Auxiliary. She also served as a Deacon in the nearby Presbyterian Church in Scottsbluff, the church she attended while in Nebraska since there was no Presbyterian Church in Gering.

In Portland she served for two years as Regent of the Wilamette Chapter of the D.A.R.¹ She also continues to be a member of the Daughters of the American Colonists; the Daughters of the Colonial Wars; the Order of the Eastern Star; and a member of the American Legion Auxiliary. She is also a member of the Rose City Park Presbyterian Church. Her chief hobby continues to be genealogy.

3. Charles and Martha Davidson

Charles, the second son of Alexander and Mary Brown Silliman, was born in Northumberland County in 1793 and died in New Galilee, Lawrence County, Pa. on Sept. 11, 1878. His wife, Martha Davidson, was born in 1800 and died on Jan. 7, 1888. Both are buried in the old Covenanter Union Cemetery in New Galilee.

Thomas and Martha had nine children: Mary; Isabel; Alexander, born in 1821; Margaret, wife of James Walker, born in 1823; William, a Reformed Presbyterian minister, born in 1824; James Renwick, born May 20, 1826—died in Iowa in 1900; Serepta, born 1831 (married Rev. S. Alexander); Rosannah, born 1833 (married John Hamilton); and Lucinda, born in 1834 (married Rev. S. T. Boyd)—died in Kansas in 1916.

James Renwick, son of Charles and Martha, married Nancy Dixon. They had seven children, all born in Iowa: William J.,

¹Seven of her direct ancestors fought in the Revolution; Alexander Silliman, Nathaniel Hamill, James Glenn, Joseph Walker, Alexander Miller, Sr., Alexander Miller, Jr., and James Kerr.

born Jan. 3, 1852; Stewart Addison, born May 25, 1853; Alexander M., born Aug. 11, 1854; Charles Dixon, born Sept. 2, 1850; Martha Ellen, born Sept. 14, 1856; James Allison, born April 16, 1859; and Milligan Lincoln, born Aug. 26, 1861.

Charles Dixon, son of James Renwick and Nancy Dixon Silliman, was born on Sept. 2, 1850 and died in Winterset, Iowa on Dec. 6, 1934. He had eight children; William J., Alonzo, Charles Walter, Pearl, Arthur Enos, Eletha, Eleta and James Renwick.

Charles Walter, son of Charles Dixon Silliman, was born on Oct. 4, 1895. He had four sons: Donald Earl (1924-1961); Walter Doyle, born Feb. 23, 1932; Paul D., born Aug. 3, 1938; and Cecil, born Aug. 16, 1939.

Arthur Enos, son of Charles Dixon Silliman, was born on Dec. 6, 1884 and died in 1953. He had nine children: Charles P., born April 26, 1906; William Ralph, born Feb. 10, 1908; Ella M., born April 4, 1910; Clair E., born Nov. 10, 1911; Fred, born May 5, 1913; Claude James, born Sept. 7, 1917; Edna, born Nov. 8, 1919; twins, Harold, born July 29, 1921 and Grace, born July 29, 1921.

4. Alexander and Jane Davidson

Alexander, third son of Alexander and Mary Brown Silliman, was born in Northumberland County, Pa. on Nov. 11, 1797 and died in Ohio on June 16, 1861. He first married Jane Davidson and after her death prior to 1836 he married Isabelle Dixon. Shortly after this second marriage he and his wife moved to Fredericktown, Knox County, Ohio. They had eleven children: Ellen, born 1836; Alexander, born March 30, 1838; Stewart, born 1839; Isabella, born 1840; Jane, born 1841; Nancy, born 1843; John, born 1848; James, born 1850; Tirzah, born 1853; Cassandra, born 1855; and Charles, born 1858.

Stewart, son of Alexander and Isabelle Dixon, was married in 1887 to Mary Zolman. Their son, James, was married in 1914 to Mary Parish. James and Mary had three sons: Stewart L., born 1916; James C., born 1922; and Benton W.,

born 1931.

Alexander, son of Alexander and Isabelle Dixon Silliman, was born in Beaver County, Pa., on March 30, 1838 and died in Ohio on June 6, 1928. He was ten years old when his family moved from the Enon Valley, Pa., to Knox County, Ohio. He assisted his father by driving the cattle which followed their covered wagon. During the Civil War he was wounded in the hip and when he recovered, he was sent to Canada by General Grant to buy horses for the Union Army. Being a great admirer of the General, he named one of his sons after him. After the war he became a stock dealer engaged primarily in buying and selling horses. A *History of Knox County, Ohio* published in 1881 credits him with being "one of our best judges (of horses) in a trade."

Alexander was married on April 5, 1860 to Lydia J. Trahern. They had seven children: Alexander Shannon, born April 17, 1860; James Arthur, born 1864; Samuel Ulysses, born 1865; Susan Belle, born 1868; Nellie, born August 14, 1870; Mamie, born 1873; and Nancy, born 1877. Mamie Silliman married L. J. Duke, a probate judge of Knox County, Ohio, for sixteen years. Their son, Clarence E. Duke became a Rear Admiral in the U.S. Navy.

Samuel Ulysses, son of Alexander and Lydia Trahern Silliman, was born in Frederickstown, Ohio, on August 11, 1865, and died in Ohio on August 12, 1952. He was a successful business man, owner of a shoe store in Canterburg, Ohio for a number of years, and later a shoe and clothing store. Samuel U. had four children: Carl Kenneth, born in Frederickstown, Ohio on May 20, 1892; Harry L., born in 1890; Encil A., born on Sept, 20, 1895; and Lucile L. (Mrs. Warren Davis), born in 1897.

Carl Kenneth, son of Samuel U. Silliman, had three sons: Leonard Alton, born in Canterburg, Ohio, on Dec. 13, 1915; Donald B., born in 1920; and Samuel Neal, born 1924.

Encil A. Silliman, son of Samuel U. had four children:

Mildred, born 1919; Robert E., born on March 27, 1921; Ruth, born in 1923; and Marjorie, born in 1925.

5. Isabella Silliman

Isabella, the youngest daughter of Alexander and Mary Brown Silliman, was born in Washington township, Northumberland County, Pa. on October 19, 1800. She was married to James Stewart on April 20, 1826. They had four children: Samuel, Robert, Alexander and James Jr. James Jr. was born May 6, 1833.

James Jr. left Pennsylvania as a young man, going first to Iowa and then to Colorado during the Pike's Peak days. There he had a mining claim but when the Civil War broke out, he enlisted in the 1st Colorado Cavalry. He returned to Pennsylvania after the war, and later moved to Harvard, Kansas, where he met and married Melissa Mann. They had two daughters; Elle, and Jennie Isabella who married Edgar Lee Maines in 1917, and one son, John James Stewart.

Today the innumerable descendants of Alexander and Mary Brown are scattered from Pennsylvania to the shores of the Pacific. Starting from the Enon Valley, they first moved to Ohio and then westward to Iowa and to other mid-western states and on across the Rocky Mountains to California and the pioneer northwest. They were seeking new homes and new opportunities just as Alexander and Mary Brown had done when they moved their family in 1814 from the banks of the Susquehanna to the Enon Valley near the forks of the Ohio.

CHAPTER IX

THOMAS AND NANCY NELSON

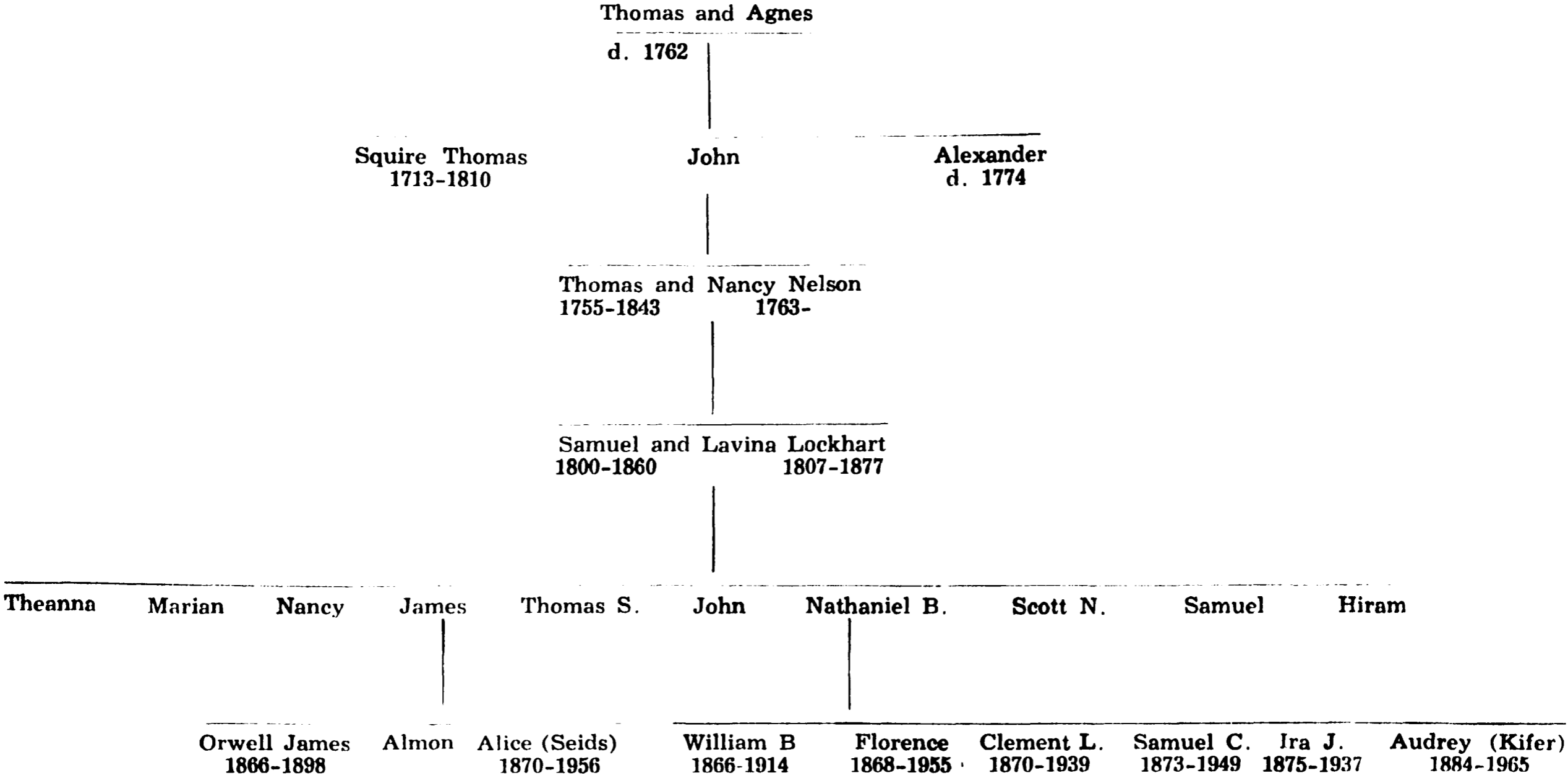
1. Known Facts About Thomas and Nancy

Thomas was born on Dec. 27, 1755 and died in Lower Mount Bethel, Northampton County, on May 29, 1843. His father, John, was a brother of Squire Thomas and Alexander. His grandmother, Agnes, mentions in her will of April 25, 1774 "my son John and his son Thomas." It is known from tax records that his father was living in Forks township in 1772.

Thomas was one of the first Revolutionary War volunteers from Forks township having enlisted on August 1, 1776 and having served as a Sergeant under Capt. John Nelson. He re-enlisted on Jan. 3, 1777 and served for two months as an Ensign under Capt. John Nelson. In July 1777 he served as a 1st Lieutenant under Capt. John Lyle. In 1780 and also in 1781 he was under Capt. Johannes Van Etten, serving on "the northern frontier against the Indians."

A series of historical records and accounts published in 1926 by the Northampton County Historical and Genealogical Society (Vol. 1, p. 133) states that Indian horrors menaced the border townships, especially in April, 1780. The Indians were pursued by Capt. Van Etten. Samuel Rea, the Lieutenant of the County, on July 4, 1780, reported that he had enlisted about fifty men with others coming in daily, and that he had issued commissions "to Capt. Johannes Van Etten and Ensign Thomas Syllaman." It was further recorded that the plundering and burning of houses were still being continued by the Indians. By Dec. 1, 1780 Lieutenant Samuel Rea was able to report, "that upwards of three hundred men were equipped and ready for service."

There are no further records of war service concerning Thomas after 1781. The next year he married Nancy Nelson.



The ceremony was performed on August 9, 1782 by the minister of the Bethel Presbyterian Church at the home of Nancy's parents in Lower Mount Bethel. Nancy was the daughter of Capt. John and Margaret Nelson and a great-granddaughter of Jonathan and Sarah Nelson who were early Mount Bethel settlers. Nancy, who was born in 1763, was eight years younger than her husband.

Thomas and Nancy continued to live in Lower Mount Bethel from 1782 until the death of Thomas in 1843. On Feb. 18, 1833 he was granted a pension certificate. (Pension Record W. 2881). After his death a new certificate (number 5019) was issued on Feb. 28, 1844 to his widow, Nancy. According to these pension records the veteran had two sons and three daughters, but only the youngest son, Samuel, was living in 1843.

2. Samuel and Lavina Lockhart

Samuel, the only surviving child of Thomas and Nancy, was born on June 8, 1800 in Lower Mount Bethel where he continued to live until 1845 at which time he and his family moved to Bryan, Ohio. In 1827 he married Lavina Lockhart. Lavina, who was born on Feb. 15, 1807 was only twenty years old at the time of her marriage. A deed recorded on April 13, 1843 shows that shortly before his father's death on May 29, 1843, "Samuel Silliman and wife, Lavina, of Lower Mount Bethel" had assigned a parcel of land to Henry Simonton. A part of this land had originally been assigned to Samuel by his father, Thomas.

Samuel and Lavina had chosen for their future home the small village of Bryan in the extreme northwest corner of Ohio in Williams County. They continued to live in Bryan until the time of their death. Samuel died on March 22, 1860, and his wife died in 1887. A number of their descendants continue to live in Ohio.

A family Bible, still in the possession of a descendant of Samuel and Lavina Silliman faithfully records the names and

dates of birth of all their ten children, namely:

Theanna, born Lower Mount Bethel, Feb. 15, 1828
Marian, born Lower Mount Bethel, April 28, 1830
Nancy, born Lower Mount Bethel, July 21, 1832
James, born Lower Mount Bethel, Nov. 20, 1834
Thomas, born Lower Mount Bethel, Jan 1, 1837
John, born Lower Mount Bethel, Nov. 17, 1839
Nathaniel B., born Lower Mount Bethel, March 4, 1842
Scott Newton, born Lower Mount Bethel, Nov. 14, 1844
Samuel, born Bryan, Ohio, Nov. 3, 1847; moved to Redlands, Calif.—had three known sons: Chauncey, Clyde, and Raymond.
Hiram, born Bryan, Ohio, Nov. 26, 1852

A. Theanna Silliman

Theanna Silliman, the eldest child of Samuel and Lavina, was born in Lower Mount Bethel on February 15, 1828 and died in Bryan, Ohio in 1897. Her husband, Thomas Short, was born in Pennsylvania on February 15, 1818 and died in Bryan, Ohio in June 1889. Their children were: Samuel James, born May 20, 1849; John McFarland, born June 10, 1851, d. 1912; Marian A., born October 31, 1853, d. 1927; Thomas Loren, born September 9, 1857, d. 1927; Elmer, born May 9, 1863; and Howard Scott, born March 31, 1868 d. 1897.

Alice S. Short, a daughter of John McFarland and Eleanor Cowan Short, born in Williams County on January 14, 1883, married Edgar Alvah Bannister on October 27, 1912. Mr. Bannister died on July 17, 1917. Mrs. Bannister was living in Colorado Springs in February, 1962, at which time she furnished the writer the above information copied from an old family Bible which her grandmother, Theanna, had inherited from her father, Samuel Silliman.

B. James and Emeline Himes

James Silliman, the eldest son of Samuel and Lavina, was

born in Lower Mount Bethel, Pa. on November 20, 1834 and died in Bryan, Ohio on January 11, 1909. He and his wife, Emeline Himes Silliman were the parents of:

Orwell James, born Bryan, Ohio, 1866; died 1898

Almon, married Mary Elser; moved to Garrett, Indiana;
two sons

Alice, born Bryan, Ohio, June 23, 1870; died 1956

(1) Orwell James Silliman

Orwell James, son of James and Emeline Silliman, was born in Bryan in 1866. He was educated at the University of Cincinnati and was a young practicing attorney at the time of his death in 1898. His widow, Erma Newcomer Silliman, was left with a small debt and the responsibility of raising her two young sons, Scott and Victor James. She had studied music at Hillsdale and Oberlin Colleges prior to her marriage. After the untimely death of her husband she taught music and gave private lessons to support and educate her two sons. She later moved to Oberlin, Ohio, in order to permit her two sons to attend Oberlin College.

(a) Scott A. Silliman

Scott A., son of Orwell James and Erma Newcomer Silliman, was born in Bryan, Ohio in 1890. He attended Oberlin College and was a member of the baseball team. He left college before graduation to go into business becoming a sales manager for several important companies, a position which involved traveling extensively throughout the United States and South America. He is now retired and is living in Auburndale, Massachusetts. He has five children: James O., Mary, Enid, Robert B., and Scott. The latter two are the children of a second marriage.

James O. Silliman, son of Scott A., was born in Bryan, Ohio on July 27, 1924, and is a prominent Chicago attorney. He is a graduate of Northwestern University, B.S. 1948; J.D.

1953. He served in the USAF from 1942 until October 1945. He was attached to the 8th Air Force, heavy bombers in 1944 and with the Air Transport Command in 1945, for which service he won both the air medal and the Distinguished Flying Cross. In addition to his legal interests he is presently serving on the Board of Education of the City of Park Ridge, Illinois, where he resides. He has three children: William James, born September 10, 1953; Nancy Madeline, born February 26, 1955; and Stephen Edward, born March 12, 1957.

Robert B., second son of Scott A. Silliman, is a graduate of the University of North Carolina and of the Law School of the University of Michigan. He is married and has one son.

Scott, third son of Scott A. Silliman is a graduate of the University of South Carolina and intends to continue his law study and the practice of law after he completes his present tour of duty with the USAF.

(b) Victor James Silliman

Victor James Silliman, second son of Orwell James Silliman, was born in Bryan, Ohio, on April 22, 1894. After graduating from the Bryan High School, he attended Ohio Wesleyan University and Oberlin College. In September, 1917, he joined the U.S. Army from which he was discharged as a lieutenant.

A resident of Cleveland for many years, he held the position of Sales Manager for the Sealright Company. He retired from this company in December, 1960 and moved to Honolulu, Hawaii where he is now President of Silliman and Torii, a firm which specializes in the sale of office machines and supplies.

He is a member of the Aloha Shrine of Honolulu, the Oahu Country Club, the Sales and Marketing Club of Honolulu, and the Chefs De Cousine Club.

His first wife, Marion Bruns Silliman, was killed in an automobile accident in April, 1953. On May 15, 1958 he mar-

ried H. Jeanne Gordon. Victor J. and Marion Bruns had three children—James G., Victor David, and Barbara Rosemary.

James Gordon Silliman, son of Victor James, was born on Sept. 12, 1921. He attended Western Reserve University in Cleveland for three years and then enlisted in the U.S. Air Force. After the war he completed his B.A. and Master's degrees at Maryland University. Now a Colonel in the Air Force, he is stationed at the Pentagon in Washington, D.C. He was married on March 4, 1943 to Wilma Jean Spencer. They have two children: James G. Silliman, Jr., born August 23, 1944, and Mary Jane, born July 4, 1948.

Victor David Silliman, second son of Victor James, was born on February 12, 1927. In 1944 he enlisted in the U.S. Navy after his graduation from high school. He graduated in 1952 from Western Reserve University with a Bachelor of Science in Business Administration degree. He is presently living in Baldwinsville, N.Y., and is employed as Products Manager for the Industrial Plastics Division of the Sealright Division of the Philipps Petroleum Company. Victor David and his wife, Virginia Sisk Silliman, have three children: Kenneth Glen, born May 22, 1952; David Victor, born June 25, 1953; and James Allen, born June 7, 1957.

Barbara Rosemary, the only daughter of Victor James Silliman, was born on July 27, 1934. She is a graduate of Denison University and is married to Gerald Linderman, a Yale graduate, and an employee of the U.S. State Department. After serving for three years in Algeria, he was sent to Northwestern University to obtain his master's degree in African affairs. Then he was sent to Leopoldville in the Congo and after two years in this post, he was requested to secure his doctor's degree, which he is now pursuing at Northwestern University. The Lindermans have two daughters: Karen, born March 24, 1961, and Katherine, born in April, 1963.

(2) Alice Silliman

Alice Silliman daughter of James and Emiline Himes Silliman, married Dr. John W. Seids who was born Oct. 28, 1871 in Bryan, Ohio. After their marriage they moved to Annawan, Illinois, where Dr. Seids was a practicing physician for ten years. He was a medical graduate of Western Reserve University, having obtained his degree in 1898. In 1910 he moved to Moline, Illinois, where he continued to practice his profession for many years. His wife Alice died in Moline on Oct. 6, 1956. Their oldest son, James Seids, born on June 5, 1894, graduated from Western Reserve University Medical School in Cleveland, Ohio and later taught surgery in the same school and was, at the same time, a practicing surgeon in Cleveland up until his death on Oct. 11, 1941. A second son John William Seids, Jr., born on April 27, 1899, served in the U.S. Navy in World War I. He is a graduate of the University of Wisconsin and is an Attorney at Law and a Real Estate and Insurance Broker in Moline, Illinois. His youngest brother, Carl Frederick Seids, D.D.S., born July 6, 1901, is a dentist in Oklahoma City.

C. Nathaniel Brittain Silliman

Nathaniel, son of Samuel and Lavina, was born in Lower Mount Bethel, Pa. on March 4, 1842 and died in Bryan, Ohio in 1905. In 1864 Nathaniel married Sarah Eagle, born in 1849; died September 19, 1937. Their children, all born in Bryan, Ohio, were:¹

William Byron, born March 2, 1866; died July 31, 1914

Florence A., born August 24, 1868; died May 29, 1955

Clement L., born May 8, 1870; died June 6, 1939

¹The following records are from an old family Bible originally owned by Nathaniel Brittain and passed on to his daughter Florence and then to her sister, Mrs. Audrey M. Kifer. The writer is indebted to Mrs. Kifer and especially to her niece, Mrs. Maud Kennedy (daughter of William B.) for their help in furnishing valuable data, especially on the descendants of their ancestor, Nathaniel Brittain Silliman.

Samuel Corwin, born March 18, 1873; died January 7, 1949

Ira J., born May 21, 1875; died October 1937

Irwin H., born January 13, 1879; died 1882

Audrey M., born March 9, 1884; died April 4, 1965

Mrs. Arthur R. Kifer

William Byron, son of Nathaniel Brittain, was born in Bryan, Ohio on March 2, 1866 and died in Pulaski, Tenn. on July 31, 1914. He and his wife, Mary Kate McKoin Silliman, were the parents of :

Maud, born in Nashville, Tenn., September 6, 1889

Mrs. John L. Kennedy

Clara, born in Nashville, Tenn., November 21, 1891

Earl J., born in Nashville, Tenn., July 4, 1893

Gladys, born in Pulaski, Tenn., June 11, 1895; died
February 16, 1919

May, born in Pulaski, Tenn., July 24, 1897; died
March 9, 1965

After the death of his first wife on Nov. 11, 1899 William B. married Mattie Daugherty Malone. Their children, all born in Pulaski, Tenn., were:

William Thomas, born May 25, 1901; died Apr. 10, 1923

Pearl, born Oct. 22, 1902

Ruby, born Sept. 3, 1904

Leona, born Nov. 28, 1905

Evelyn, born Aug. 7, 1908; died July 22, 1909

Fred Comer, born Jan. 15, 1910; died Mar. 3, 1961

Clement L., second son of Nathaniel Brittain, had six children: Clyde J., born in Ludington, Michigan on April 16, 1900, living in Yonkers, N.Y. in 1960, and had two sons, John V. and Robert C.; Pearl (Mrs. John D. Hanson) who lived in New Mexico; Vern, who served in World War I, later married and settled in Mass.; Ellery V.; Orville, who lived in Oregon; and Ellis.

Samuel C., third son of Nathaniel Brittain, had a son, Charles Silliman, who settled in Boise, Idaho.

These numerous descendants of John Silliman and his grandson Samuel, the only living child of Thomas and Nancy Nelson, scattered today from Yonkers, N. Y. to California and from Massachusettes to Alabama can be grateful that an Indian bullet did not pierce the heart of Ensign (later Lieutenant) Thomas, and that his only living son Samuel did not suffer the fate of his older brother and sisters in whatever prevented them from reaching maturity.

PART II

THE SOUTH CAROLINA LINE

John Silliman
1747-1826

Born Carncastle, North Ireland
Died York District. South Carolina

Thomas
b. 1786

John Jr.
b. 1792

William
b. 1796

James
b. 1800

Alex P.

Thomas

Ann

Wm. C.

John

James

Samuel

Calvin U.

Wm. A.

Candour J.

Ralph

John R. Sarah Gertrude Wm. Calvin James M.

John C.

Alice E. Candour Mary A. Louise A. Wm. A. Jr.

CHAPTER X

JOHN SILLIMAN

1. From Carncastle to South Carolina

While a number of Scotch-Irish Presbyterians had settled in Carolina¹ as early as 1700, conditions in North Ireland had improved to such an extent by 1760 that the exodus to America had almost ceased. However, as conditions worsened after 1770 due to further persecutions and adverse trade laws, which especially affected the linen industry, many again turned their faces to America. It has been estimated that no less than 10,000 persons from North Ireland emigrated to America between 1771 and 1774.² The two Carolinas offered greater opportunities in the choice of land and in land grants to European Protestants at this time than did Pennsylvania.

It was during these troubled years, between 1770 and 1774 that two young men, both named John Silliman, left North Ireland for the Carolinas. One settled in Rowan County, North Carolina, and the other John settled in the York District, South Carolina.

Land records show that the North Carolina John secured land in Rowan County in 1774, and that the South Carolina John obtained one hundred acres of land on July 20, 1772 in present-day Fairfield County. Both Johns fought in the Revolution and both had sons, with the same name, James born in Rowan County in 1785 and another James, the youngest son

¹ According to Channing, *A History of the United States*, Vol. II, the population of Carolina in 1700 was about eight thousand "of whom not far from five thousand lived in the southern part." Misgovernment furnished the pretext for voiding the Proprietary Charter for Carolina and for the erecting of two separate royal provinces in 1728.

² Henry Jones Ford, *The Scotch-Irish in America*, Princeton University Press, 1915.

of the South Carolina John, born in the York District on February 24, 1800. The writer has been unable to trace the North Carolina Sillimans beyond this point. However, a great grandson of the South Carolina John, John Reid Silliman, met just prior to World War I a Mr. Hugh Silliman and visited him in his home at Thyatira, North Carolina. While the two men failed to establish any direct relationship between their two ancestors who came about the same time from North Ireland, John Reid Silliman later described Hugh Silliman to his sister, Gertrude, as a man of substantial means, with a fine family of children and a Presbyterian elder who continued "the old custom of family worship."

It is further revealed from the letters of John Reid Silliman that James Silliman married Elizabeth Miller and they had eight children. A brother of James, Alexander Silliman, who was unmarried and living in Sumter District, South Carolina in 1821, specifically mentions in his Will (recorded November 16, 1821-Sumter Wills, Vol. I, Book A.A., pages 183-184), "My brother James Silliman—my share of my father's lands in North Carolina. . . my mother, Mrs. Isabella Silliman, of Rowan County, North Carolina. . . my brother Thomas Silliman. . . my brother Samuel. . . to my brothers Robert Silliman and John Silliman. . ."

Not only is the similarity of the names of the children of the two John Sillimans, of North and South Carolina quite impressive, but even more impressive is the similarity of the names of the Pennsylvania and North Carolina Silliman families (i.e.) Isabella, John, Thomas, Alexander, James, and Samuel.

It is to be regretted that as of this date so little is known about the North Carolina Sillimans or where they may have settled after moving away from the old family Thyatira homestead, west of Salisbury in Rowan County. It would appear that of the six sons of John, who originally came from North Ireland, only his son James continued to live in Thyatira where he died in 1848 at the age of sixty three. One of his eight children was named John, who inherited the home place and who was, in all probability the father of Hugh Silliman.

Fortunately the family records of the South Carolina John have been carefully preserved. Thus we know not only that he came from North Ireland, but also we know the exact area from which he came. He was born in Carncastle, just north of Belfast in 1747 and came to South Carolina in 1771, bringing with him the following certificate:

. . . the bearer, John Silliman, has lived in this parish from his infancy, free from Public Scandal, or ground of Church Censure; at Carncastle, April 27th, 1771 by John Lewson.

John Lewson, as discovered by the writer in Belfast in June, 1964, from Presbyterian Church records, was a Presbyterian minister ordained at Carncastle on December 20, 1738. He retired from the ministry in 1793.

While the name of John's father is not known, it is known that he owned a "Linen Bleach near Belfast." Carncastle is less than twenty miles from Belfast. When John left Carncastle where the linen manufacturers and weavers were at the time largely unemployed, there was little love in his heart for English rule. But if he left North Ireland to escape the British, he soon found himself in their direct path in the new world, for the land he bought in 1772 lay just southeast of King's Mountain, and it was in the Battle of King's Mountain on October 7, 1780 that Lord Cornwallis suffered his first real defeat in his well-planned attempt to conquer both South and North Carolina. The American historian, Edward Channing, calls this battle which took place actually on a small elevated plateau known as King's Mountain, "the severest action of the war since Bunker Hill." The real credit for this victory, however, must be given to the large number of Scotch-Irish pioneer farmers in the area who had weakened the British forces and their artillery trains and baggage wagons by fighting behind trees and rocks.

These hastily assembled pioneers were without uniforms, baggage, or cannon of their own. Yet they were ever ready to

strike a blow and as quickly to disperse. They continued their guerrilla tactics until the British were in full retreat back to Charleston. Both John Jr. and his son, Rev. Alexander Perry Silliman, who was a lad of eight when his grandfather died, were to pass on to their children stories of their father's and grandfather's exploits against the British in 1780. While John had served for only a brief time and without thought of pay,¹ he had, none-the-less, done his part, just as his distant Pennsylvania Scotch-Irish cousins had done on the banks of the Delaware, in driving the British out of his new homeland.

It is not known when or whom he married, but from authentic Bible records it is clear that he died in York District, South Carolina, on October 10, 1826 at the age of 79.

The dates of birth of the four known children of John Silliman are as follows:

1. Thomas Neely, born in York District, May 5, 1786
2. John Jr., born in York District, February 25, 1792
3. William, born in York District, December 13, 1796
4. James, born in York District, February 24, 1800

Thomas Neely left home in the early 1830's going either to Tennessee or to Arkansas. While no further records have been found, he is believed to have a number of descendants living today in Oklahoma, descendants who have been able to trace their ancestor back to Tennessee, and the tradition is that his unknown father originally went to Tennessee from South Carolina.

William, John's third son, born in 1796, never married. He died on January 27, 1824 at the age of 27. The other sons, John Jr. and James, will be the subjects of the following sections of this chapter.

¹ John Silliman of North Carolina received pay in 1786 for his services as a soldier. *North Carolina Rev. Army Accts.* Vol. 26, p. 26, folio 3. Records show he was from Salisbury District.

2. John, Jr. and Mary Campbell Silliman

John Jr. was married to Mary Campbell in 1816. Mary, who was born in South Carolina on September 9, 1791, was the daughter of Alexander and Mary Campbell. Her parents had come from Scotland direct to South Carolina.

John Jr. and Mary had eight children, all born in the York District. They were:

- A. Alexander Perry, born on June 19, 1818
- B. Thomas N., born on October 22, 1819
- C. Ann Paulina, born on September 14, 1821
- D. William C., born on December 17, 1823
- E. John M., born on October 10, 1825
- F. James M., born on November 5, 1827
- G. Samuel M., born on August 16, 1830
- H. Calvin U., born on April 4, 1833

In 1834 John Jr. and Mary, with their own eight children and the three young orphaned sons of John's brother, James, who died in 1830, moved from York District, South Carolina to Mississippi where they bought land for a farm in Kemper County, eight miles north of Lauderdale. They lived in a temporary shelter "on a beautiful hill under a large oak tree," while John and his sixteen-year-old son, Alexander Perry, with the aid of three or more slaves, whom they had brought with them from South Carolina¹, cut timber and hewed the logs from a virgin forest to build a house for the family to live in.

The next year, on June 26, 1835, John died from a sun-stroke. Thus his wife was left alone with her own eight children and the three young nephews in a new unsettled country. She not only had to have the forest cleared to raise their crops, but she had to spin and weave cloth for the clothing for her children and a few slaves as well. She learned from friendly

¹ One of these young slaves was Mary's personal house servant in South Carolina, and she never left the family even during or after the Civil War. She lived with them until her death. She was affectionately known by the family as Aunt Phoebe.

Indians how to use the many plentiful roots and herbs for medicine, food, and for dyeing cloth. She was a capable manager and exceedingly ambitious for her children. Her youngest child was only two years old at the time of his father's death in 1835, and her youngest nephew was only six. Not only was she able to raise all of her dependents, but also somehow she managed, in addition to bringing her husband's lands into production, to send her oldest son to Princeton and three other sons through medical school. She was also able to send an adopted nephew, Candour Jefferson Silliman, to Oglethorpe College so that he, like her son Alexander Perry, might become a minister.

A. Alexander Perry Silliman

Alexander Perry, the eldest son of John Jr. and Mary Campbell Silliman, was only seventeen at the time of his father's death. He assisted his mother in every possible way, and she continued to lean on him until her death in 1866, at the age of seventy-five. Alexander and his descendants will be the subject of the following chapter.

B. Thomas Newton Silliman

Thomas N., the second child of John Jr. and Mary, was married to Susan Maria Farrar on January 22, 1845. They had three daughters: Martha Jane, born January 10, 1848, who married William Holder about 1866; Mary Augusta, born January 18, 1850, who married Thomas Boyd; and Susan Paulina, born May 13, 1852, who married John Lawrence Davenport on February 2, 1871. Susan and John L. Davenport had three sons and two daughters. Thomas Newton Silliman died in Mississippi on June 12, 1854.

C. Ann Paulina Silliman

Ann Paulina, the third child of John Jr. and Mary, was married about 1839 to Frank B. Moore. They lived in Tyler,

Texas where their eldest son, John Silliman Moore, was born on June 7, 1840.

John studied for the ministry of the Presbyterian Church. His first pastorate was in Jefferson, Texas; second at McKinney; third and last in Sherman, Texas. He and his wife, Sallie McIvar Coit, had three daughters and two sons. Their son, George C. Moore, was also a Presbyterian minister.

The other children of Ann Paulina Silliman and Frank B. Moore were:

Mary A., born August 12, 1842; married Newton Prestwood

Susan C., married Mark Sledge

Sarah Paulina; married S. P. Burke

William Rutledge Moore, born June 4, 1848; married Nannie Davis

Harriet; married Austin Boyd

Addison Perry Moore, born December 26, 1857; married Mary Aldrich

Their mother, Ann Paulina Silliman Moore, died in Tyler, Texas on April 6, 1892 at the age of seventy-one.

D. William C. Silliman, M.D.

William C., the fourth child of John Jr. and Mary, studied medicine and graduated from the University of Virginia. He was a practicing physician in Lauderdale, Mississippi until the time of his death on October 26, 1891. He was married to Alice Gibbs, but they had no children.

E. John M. Silliman

John M., the fifth child of John Jr. and Mary Campbell Silliman died in Mississippi on February 17, 1855 at the age of thirty. He was never married. He was a young merchant at the time of his death.

F. James Monroe Silliman, M.D.

James M., the sixth child of John Jr. and Mary, studied medicine in New Orleans and also in Baltimore, Maryland. In 1874 he was married in Jefferson, Texas to Julia Chappel Coit of Cheraw, South Carolina. They lived in Palestine, Texas, where he practiced his profession. He died there on April 18, 1892, and his wife died in Palo Alto, California on November 23, 1921.

Their son, John Calvin Silliman, was born in Palestine, Texas on February 8, 1878 and died in California on October 27, 1935. He, like his father, studied medicine, graduating from the University of Virginia in 1899 and from Columbia University College of Physicians and Surgeons in 1904. He was married to Bertha Umstead in Scranton, Pa. on July 19, 1906, when he was serving as an intern at the Moses Taylor Hospital. Soon after his marriage he returned to Palestine, Texas, where his mother was still living and practiced medicine until 1915. He was an active Presbyterian layman, and previous to his going to California he had made a trip to the Orient in connection with the Laymen's Movement of the Southern Presbyterian Church, to visit the mission fields of China, Korea, and Japan, returning home through Manchuria, Russia, Norway, Sweden, England, and Scotland.

In 1915 he moved his family to Palo Alto, California. His family consisted of himself, his mother, his wife, and their three children: Ruth Elizabeth, born in Palestine, Texas, on June 13, 1908; Julian Winthrop, born in Palestine, on August 15, 1909; and John Calvin, Jr., born in Palestine on October 5, 1913. All three graduated from Leland Stanford University.

Julian Winthrop Silliman is a retired Captain (U.S.N.) presently living in Alexandria, Va. He was married on Sept. 27, 1936 to Anne Marie Tucker. They have a daughter, Nancy Lee, born Dec. 22, 1942 and an adopted son Jay Robert.

John Calvin Jr., is presently living in La Habra, California. He is an engineer by profession, still a Presbyterian, but he

is no longer a Texas Democrat, for he has become a Republican. He and his wife, Jane Priscilla Thompson Silliman, married on May 6, 1939, have two children: Patricia Marie, born on May 17, 1941, and Richard Calvin Silliman, born on May 12, 1944. Patricia graduated from the University of Oregon in 1963 and is now living and teaching in Arlington, Virginia. Richard C. is (1965) in his third year at the Arizona State University.

G. Samuel M. Silliman

Samuel, the seventh child of John Jr. and Mary Campbell Silliman, was only four years old when his parents moved from York District, South Carolina to Kemper County, Mississippi. The rest of his life was spent on the "old Homestead," (a continuation of the one established there in 1834 but enlarged and improved over the years), where he became more or less a southern gentleman of the old school. He and his wife, Elizabeth Pigford, had no children of their own, but his wife's niece, Sarah Miller, lived with them as a devoted daughter. Elizabeth Silliman has been described as "a splendid type of Southern housekeeper." Wholehearted and lavish hospitality greeted all visitors.

Gertrude Silliman Mullings, the daughter of Alexander Perry Silliman, has painted a beautiful picture of her uncle Samuel and the Old Homestead in a letter dated January 3, 1895 which she wrote to her brother during a visit in the home of her uncle and aunt. The following paragraphs are taken from this letter:

When Sister and I reached Lauderdale it was about three P.M. Uncle Sam was waiting for us, with his nice new surrey and two horses, Bob Lee (a former slave), driving. The trees everywhere were sheathed with ice, and the scene, all the way, eight miles to the Old Homestead, was one of indescribable beauty. The road was bad, but the team was good. We were well wrapped up, and were not long on the way. You **must** come to the Old Homestead!

Uncle Sam is just lovely to see, and to hear. He is like

Pa (Rev. Alexander Perry Silliman), except that Pa had a careworn look. Uncle Sam, with his silvery hair, and his fine, good face, looks like he had never had a care in the world in all his life. So jolly and so happy to see us. Aunt Lizzie says he was not able to sleep for thinking of our company for the New Year. We found Aunt Lizzie at home, with Sarah Miller, her niece. Uncle Calvin came too. (Dr. Calvin Upshur Silliman)

The big old fireplaces were piled high with hickory and oak logs, the fires roaring. The supper was such a sumptuous feast as I have never seen before—large platters of delicious fried chicken, sausage and pork, hot biscuits and waffles too. Presbyterian cornbread and egg bread, as well as rice and candied yams, several kinds of cake, jellies, preserves and pickles. We did justice to all the good things to eat. It was fine to see our two uncles together, and to hear them talk of “old times.” Uncle Calvin is looking well, but Uncle Sam just looks like a picture with his happy face.

About nine o'clock hymn books were handed around, and we all joined in singing, “What a Friend we have in Jesus.” Uncle Sam then read, very impressively, the last Psalm, and we all knelt in prayer with him. It was a scene long to be cherished in memory.

The house is the same log house in which our grandmother (Mary Campbell Silliman) lived, but it is very comfortable, and the latchstring actually hangs on the outside of the doors. We slept on a big feather bed, with beautiful quilts piled high. Had a good night's rest, and a fine breakfast. Uncle Calvin went back to Meridian. There are here several of the old slaves who have never left the place. “Aunt Betty” and “Uncle Bob,” “Aunt Phoebe” who was grandmother's house servant in South Carolina, “Aunt Sarah” and others, all as glad to see us as if we were their very own kinfolks. They seem to think that Uncle Sam belongs to them now!

It would have been a privilege to have visited in such a home and to have known Samuel Silliman. He continued to live in the old home on the old home place until his death on February 7, 1902.

H. Calvin Upshur Silliman, M.D.

Calvin Upshur, the youngest son of John Jr. and Mary Campbell Silliman, studied medicine and graduated from Tulane University in New Orleans. In 1858 he married Jennie Hughes, whose father was also a Mississippi physician. Calvin U. and Jennie Hughes Silliman had a son, John Hughes, born on February 13, 1860. In July 1861 another son was born, but both the child and the mother died.

In 1865 Dr. Calvin U. Silliman was married to Jennie Mitchell. He and his second wife had five children, three of whom died in infancy. Their eldest daughter, Carrie, was married in 1890 to Walter Whitefield. A younger daughter, Mary, was married in June, 1906 to Amos E. Harris of Meridian, Mississippi.

Dr. Calvin U. Silliman, after his first marriage, lived and practiced medicine in Meridian, Mississippi. Later he moved to Emelle, Alabama where he continued to live until the time of his death in September, 1913.

John Hughes Silliman, son of Dr. Calvin Upshur and Jennie Hughes Silliman, was first employed on a farm near Meridian, Mississippi. In 1881 he moved to Palestine, Texas, where he became employed as a clerk in a hardware store largely owned by his uncle, Dr. James Monroe Silliman. Within a few years he was able to buy an interest in the company, and still later he became the chief owner and president of the firm which is still known as the Silliman Hardware Company.

John Hughes Silliman was an astute businessman who accumulated in his lifetime choice residential properties and other valuable real estate. He was a successful trader in real estate as well as a keen business executive. He was also active in church work, and at the time of his death he was a ruling elder of the First Presbyterian Church of Palestine. It was written of him after his death that his fortune had been built "upon the foundation of character and faith in his community and friends."

John Hughes Silliman was married on Feb. 20, 1888 to Elizabeth Burnett, niece of Judge J. R. Burnett. She died in 1909. In 1920 he was married to Miss Laura Brook of Palestine.

He died suddenly in August, 1936 while on a vacation at Miami Beach, Florida. He was survived by his second wife, Laura Brook Silliman who continued to live until July, 1959; by his daughter, Mrs. Mattie Silliman Peters (Mrs. Ernest); and a grandson, John Hamlin Peters. Mrs. Peters was born on April 10, 1892 and continues to live in Palestine, Texas. She is a graduate of the Texas Presbyterian College in Milford. Like her father she is an active worker in the First Presbyterian Church of that city. Her husband, Ernest Peters, is a deacon and an elder of this same church. He has been a member of the Palestine Rotary Club since 1922, serving as president in 1931-32. He has also served as Legion Commander, President of the Chamber of Commerce, and is an honorary life director of the Palestine YMCA.

Their son, John Hamlin Peters, born January 18, 1931, after attending the University of Texas, entered the Kenneth Sawyer Goodman Theater which is connected with the Art Institute of Chicago. There he majored in scenic design. Later he spent a year at the Yale Drama School. For several summers he was the scenic designer for the Division of Opera at the National Music Camp at Interlochen, Michigan. At the present time he is a member of the staff of the Chicago Lyric Opera Company.

* * *

The descendants of John Jr. and Mary Campbell Silliman have continued to prosper and to bring credit to their original North Ireland ancestor, John Silliman Sr., who first settled in South Carolina in 1771. The seven sons of John Jr. and Mary Campbell Silliman: Alexander Perry; Thomas N.; William Calvin; John M.; James M.; Samuel M.; and Calvin U.; and their children in turn were all reared in the Presbyterian faith of their fathers. The loyalty of the Silliman Family, both Pennsylvania and South Carolina Lines, to the Presbyterian

faith is quite impressive.

While John Jr. died prematurely in 1835, within a short time after he had moved his young and large family from South Carolina to Mississippi, his wife, Mary Campbell, continued to live on the old original homestead in Kemper County, Mississippi until her death in 1866. By this time her seven sons, her daughter Ann Paulina, and her three adopted nephews had found themselves firmly established in worthy professions. Much of their success as well as that of their descendants is due to this remarkable woman. Like the Sillimans of Connecticut and Pennsylvania, the success of the South Carolina-Mississippi Sillimans has in no small part been due to their successful marriages. Not many are privileged to have had an ancestor like Mary Campbell.

3. James and Mary McFadden Silliman

James, the youngest son of John and brother of John, Jr. was born in York District, South Carolina on February 24, 1800 and died on July 19, 1830. His wife, Mary McFadden, whom he had married on March 6, 1823, had died four months earlier on March 12, 1830. Their three orphaned sons, William Albert, Candour and Ralph McFadden, were adopted and raised by John Jr. and his wife Mary Campbell Silliman.

A. William Albert Silliman

William Albert, the eldest son of James and Mary McFadden Silliman, was born on October 22, 1825. He was married to Mary Alexander. Their first home was near York, Alabama but later, after the death of their first three children, Mattie, Virginia, and Mary Adeline, they moved to Cuba, Alabama, approximately ten miles southeast of Lauderdale, Mississippi and just east of the Mississippi-Alabama state line. William Albert was a founder of the Lauderdale Presbyterian Church and served as an elder and clerk of the Session for many years. His grandson, Robert E. Payne, is still an elder and clerk of the Session in the same church.

William Albert was a soldier in the Confederate Army. His wife, Mary Alexander, who was born in 1843, died on February 25, 1898. William Albert died less than two months later on April 5, 1898. Both are buried in the Oxford Cemetery adjoining the Oxford Presbyterian Church, Route 1, Cuba, Alabama. Also buried in the same cemetery are William Albert's first cousins, Samuel M. and Dr. William C. Silliman, and his grandson Robert Silliman Wilder.

The children of William Albert and Mary A. Silliman who grew to maturity were:

Alice Elizabeth, born July 31, 1870; died June 16, 1934;
m. Owen J. Wilder (1868-1960)

Candour J., born May 4, 1872; died July 2, 1940; unmarried

Mary Alberta, born September 18, 1880; died June 21, 1956;
m. 1902 William Parrish Payne (1876-1943)

Louise Alexander, born January 30, 1882; died November 5, 1959; m. Charles E. Lancaster; (2) 1936 Henderson Peteet

William Albert Jr., born May 12, 1885; died September 11, 1956; m. March 6, 1937, Leila F. Best; died Nov. 1959

(1) Alice Elizabeth Silliman

Alice Elizabeth, born July 31, 1870, married Owen James Wilder, a farmer and land owner in Lauderdale County, Mississippi and an elder in the Oxford Presbyterian Church. They had two children, Julia B. and Robert Silliman Wilder. Julia B., born August 30, 1889, married Ulysses Eugene Reid. Their son, Eugene Wilder Reid, born April 25, 1912, is a Presbyterian minister.

Robert Silliman Wilder, born February 5, 1891 married Luna Fleming. They had four daughters: Daisy Elizabeth, born February 15, 1918; Annie Doris, born January 12, 1920; Julia Ida, born November 27, 1921; and Virginia Berta, born August 10, 1923. The husband of Julia Ida Wilder, Clifton R. Shinner, was killed on the Island of Corregidor in the Philip-

pires in 1942. Virginia Berta Wilder married John H. Hocker in 1944. They have two children, Linda Kay Hocker, born October 3, 1949 and Robert Alan Hocker, born July 31, 1954. The Hocker family live in Pekin, Illinois.

Robert Silliman Wilder died in May 1961. He is buried in the Oxford Cemetery, adjoining the Oxford Presbyterian Church in Cuba, Alabama. His wife continues to live in Lauderdale, Mississippi.

(2) Mary Alberta Silliman

Mary Alberta, the second daughter of William Albert and Mary Silliman, was born on September 18, 1880. She was married on April 1, 1902 to William Parish Payne. They owned a farm five miles east of Lauderdale, Mississippi. W. P. Payne died on October 12, 1943 and his wife, Mary Alberta, died on June 21, 1956.

Mary Alberta and William Parish Payne had thirteen children, two of whom died at the time of their birth. Their eleven surviving children were:

- (a) Sara Louise, born January 18, 1903
- (b) Mary Elizabeth, born December 8, 1903
- (c) Joel Gellis, born March 25, 1905
- (d) Dr. William Norman, born Nov. 15, 1907; died Feb. 27, 1963
- (e) Wilford Albert, born October 5, 1908; died Feb. 14, 1957
- (f) Robert Emmitt, born March 14, 1910
- (g) Margaret Belle, born November 19, 1911
- (h) Julia Wilder, born April 11, 1913
- (i) Woodrow Parish, born April 26, 1915; died January 2, 1963
- (j) Bertie Mildred, born January 5, 1917
- (k) Edith Merle, born September 19, 1918

(a) Sara Louise Payne was born in Lauderdale County, on her father's plantation, east of Lauderdale. She lived with her parents until the time of her marriage on August 7, 1942 to Walter Vernon Lowe of Jackson, Mississippi. He attended the Jackson High School and after his graduation from college he spent one year taking graduate work at the Columbia Theological Presbyterian Seminary in Atlanta, Georgia.

Mrs. Lowe, before her marriage, had taught school in Lauderdale County and at the time of her marriage was employed in the Meridian City Schools. She was a graduate (B.S.) of Mississippi Southern College and completed her M.A. degree from the George Peabody College for Teachers in 1940. Later she took post graduate work at Southern College and New York University. Following her marriage she was employed for a year and a half by the U.S. Government, working in the National Archives, in Washington, D.C. Her husband was an employee of the Federal Power Commission.

While the Lowes enjoyed living in the national capital, they decided in 1945 to return to Jackson, Mississippi to be nearer their parents and relatives. Mrs. Lowe has taught in the Davis Elementary School in Jackson since 1945 but will soon retire. She has continued to teach because of her interest in children and for the pure joy of teaching. Her husband is a contractor and builder and is extensively engaged in the real estate business, constructing buildings and selling new homes in the various subdivisions of the city. The Lowes are members of the Jackson Central Presbyterian Church. They have no children of their own.

(b) Mary Elizabeth Payne has lived for many years in Jackson, Mississippi. She was an elementary school teacher in Lauderdale County prior to the war and then served for nearly two years during the war in a government agency in Washington, D.C. In 1945 she returned to Jackson to make a home for her mother, and taught school there until 1964.

(c) Joel Gellis Payne married, May 15, 1938, Olive Mae Kennedy of Meridian, Miss. Most of their married life has

been spent in Brandon, Miss. where he is employed as an area engineer by the U.S. Department of Agriculture—Soil Conservation Service. They have three children: Jo Ann Payne, born October 30, 1941, a graduate of the University of Mississippi and presently a high school teacher in Jackson, Miss.; Shirley Virginia Payne, born August 5, 1943, University of Mississippi graduate and elementary school teacher; and Joel Gellis Payne Jr., born August 2, 1947.

(d) William Norman Payne, M.D., married June 4, 1934, Elizabeth Hermans of Mount Hope, W. Va. They had three children: Charles Lloyd Payne, born August 9, 1939; William Norman Payne Jr., born June 5, 1944, now a student in the University of Alabama; and Elizabeth Ann Payne, born April 21, 1945. Dr. Payne lived in Bessemer, Alabama until his death on February 27, 1963.

(e) Wilford Albert Payne married February 7, 1944, Maxine Plunket. They had two children, Marylyn Payne, born December 30, 1947 and Wilford Albert Payne Jr., born April 11, 1950. Wilford Albert Payne Sr. served in World War II and then settled in Hattiesburg, Miss. where he continued to live until his death on February 14, 1957. Prior to his death he served as a Farm Security Supervisor and as Sheriff of Forrest County, Mississippi.

(f) Robert Emmitt Payne received a Bachelor of Arts degree from the University of Mississippi in 1935, majoring in mathematics and science. While at the University, during his junior and senior years, he was a member of the Ole Miss Glee Club. After graduation he taught mathematics and science in the Lauderdale County Schools and at Quitman High School in Clarke County.

In August 1938 he was appointed assistant supervisor of Jasper County, Mississippi, with the Farm Security Administration. In June, 1939 he was transferred to Rolling Fork, Mississippi, as FSA Supervisor of Sharkey and Issaquena Counties. He served in that capacity until December 1, 1963

when he resigned and returned to Lauderdale to take charge of the family farm five miles east of the town. His father, William Parish Payne, had died on October 12, 1943.

In 1944 Robert E. Payne was elected an elder of the Lauderdale Presbyterian Church to fill the vacancy resulting from the death of his father. Shortly thereafter he was elected Clerk of the Session, a position he continues to hold. His grandfather, William Albert Silliman, who was a founder of this church, had also served as an elder and Clerk of the Session of the same church.

In March, 1948 Robert E. Payne was appointed Acting Postmaster of Lauderdale. He became Assistant Postmaster in 1951 and Postmaster, by presidential appointment on May 1, 1959, a position he still holds. He served as a member and secretary of the Board of Trustees of the Lauderdale Consolidated School from 1951 through 1958. He was also for several years a member of the Lauderdale County Soil Conservation District, and a member of the Board of Directors of the State Soil Conservation District.

On July 24, 1937 Robert E. Payne was married to Zoe Edith McDaniel of Quitman, Mississippi. They have three children: Robert Emmitt Payne, Jr., born July 30, 1940, married January, 1961, Mavis McCurdy, and they have a son Robert E. Payne III, born Sept. 18, 1963; William M. Payne, born December 15, 1942, married Jane Elizabeth Beeland, of Forest, Mississippi, on September 4, 1965; and Mary Katherine Payne, born February 25, 1945. William Norman Payne is now a senior at Mississippi State University, Starkville, Mississippi, and his sister, Mary Katherine, is a senior at the University of Mississippi, Oxford, Mississippi.

Robert E. Payne Sr. and his wife continue to live on the old Payne farm, in the home originally built by his father and mother, and where all his brothers and sisters were born.

(g) Margaret Belle Payne married, June 27, 1937, Atty. John McCully of De Kalb, Miss. They have two children: William Edward McCully, born July 29, 1939 and Margaret

Ann McCully, born October 15, 1944. Margaret Ann is a graduate of the University of Mississippi and is employed in the educational department of the Jackson public schools. The father and husband died in De Kalb on October 19, 1961. The mother, Margaret Belle McCully, now lives with her daughter in Jackson, Miss.

(h) Julia Wilder Payne married, March 7, 1939, Cecil E. McNeill of De Kalb, Miss. They have two daughters: Mary Cecile McNeill, born July 4, 1944; and Sara Mildred McNeill, born March 7, 1946. The family have lived in Jackson since 1958.

(i) Woodrow Parish Payne married, June 29, 1940 Mозelle Daws of De Kalb, Miss. Most of their married life was spent in Annistan, Alabama, where the husband until the time of his death on January 2, 1963 was employed, as an area engineer for the U.S. Government Army Corps. They had two sons: Woodrow Daws Payne, born October 7, 1947; and Danny Keith Payne, born April 26, 1954. The family now live in Jackson, Miss.

(j) Bertie Mildred Payne married, March 20, 1941, Wesley Gilbert of Waynesboro, Miss. After her husband's service in the U.S. Army during World War II, they settled in Columbus, Miss. where the husband owns a seed store. They have two children: Thomas Payne Gilbert, born November 12, 1946 and Charles Perry Gilbert, born March 8, 1952.

(k) Edith Merle Payne was married on July 13, 1946 to Preston W. Bullock of Delhi, La. Her husband served in the army during World War II. Until 1957 they lived in Delhi after which time they moved to Jackson, Mississippi where Mr. Bullock is employed in the City Post Office and Mrs. Bullock is a public school teacher. They have one daughter, Betty Sue, born April 21, 1950.

(3) Louise Alexander Silliman

Louise A., daughter of William Albert and Mary Silliman,

was born in Cuba, Alabama on January 30th, 1882 and died in Birmingham, Alabama on November 5th, 1959. She married Charles Edward Lancaster of York, Alabama in June, 1900 in the Oxford Presbyterian Church at Cuba, Alabama. Charles E. Lancaster was born in York, Alabama in November 1879. He had owned a dry goods store in York prior to moving to Birmingham, Alabama in 1918. Later he became a shoe salesman at the Guarantee Shoe Company in Birmingham.

Charles Maxwell Lancaster, the only child of Louise Silliman and Charles Edward Lancaster, was born in York, Alabama on April 28, 1911. He attended the Ullman Public School in Birmingham (1919-1924), Paul Hayne High School (1924-25), Phillips High School (1925-27), and Howard College (1927-1930). While at Howard he received a tuition scholarship from the college and a three hundred dollar yearly loan for living expenses from the Rotary Club of Birmingham.

After receiving his B.A. degree from Howard College, he went to Indiana University on a French Fellowship and besides teaching two classes of French, he completed all necessary work for his M.A. degree in 1931, which was awarded to him (in absentia) in June, 1932. From October 1931 until June 1934 he was a Rhodes scholar at Oxford University, where he received a B.A. degree (1934), an honorary M.A. degree (in absentia) in 1937, and an honorary D.Litt. degree (in absentia) in 1949.

On December 27, 1950 he received, together with his colleague at Vanderbilt University, Dr. Paul T. Manchester, a decoration from the government of Chile for their translation of two Chilean epics. These verse translations into English were published under the titles of *The Araucaniad*, Vanderbilt Press, 1945 and *Arauco Tamed*, 1948, New Mexico University Press. The joint decorations were awarded at a special ceremony in Washington, D.C. by the Chilean Ambassador, Nieto del Rio.

Doctor Lancaster taught French, Spanish, and German at Howard College from 1934 until March, 1939, at which time he joined the faculty of Vanderbilt University as a professor of

Romance Languages. Since 1962 he has handled all the Italian classes at Vanderbilt, and his present title is Professor of French and Italian. He and his wife have five children—two sons and three daughters, and four grandchildren.

B. Candour Jefferson Silliman

Candour Jefferson, son of James and Mary McFadden Silliman, was born on June 11, 1827. When he was only three years old, his parents died. After attending Oglethorpe College in Georgia he went to a theological seminary in Columbia, South Carolina. In a letter to his aunt, Mary Campbell Silliman, dated December 5, 1854 he speaks of his good health except for "slight colds now and then." He had recently attended a Synod meeting in Charleston, South Carolina. He writes of his pleasure in hearing that his cousin, Calvin Upshur Silliman, was studying to be a doctor and then he adds, "the Dr., next to a minister, may do more for the good of souls, than any other man, if he acts providently with a desire for the glory of God." This letter also reveals a warmth of feeling for his aunt who had raised him and who had been the only mother he had ever known.

Other letters¹ from him show that he was preparing to be a Presbyterian missionary. By November 1855 he had become a missionary to the Choctaw Indians, and his station was near the Red River along the northeastern present day Texas-Oklahoma border.

Shortly after his arrival at his new station in 1855 he wrote a long letter to his cousin, Alexander Perry Silliman which began—"Spencer Academy Near Doaksville, C. N. (Choctaw Nation) Nov. 29th 1855," describing his reception and the

¹ These original letters of Candour Jefferson Silliman and a small New Testament printed by the American Bible Society in 1854 which he had with him at the time of his death were given to Robert B. Silliman in 1965 by Mrs. Sara Payne Lowe, a granddaughter of William Albert Silliman, the elder brother of Candour J. Silliman. After the death of Candour J., his personal effects and his Bible were sent to his brother William Albert.

nature of his work. He was living with another missionary family, the Rev. and Mrs. Reid,¹ and he describes his room as large and pleasant with "rough plank" walls, but "very nicely white-washed." Then he adds, "as soon as the Red River rises so that our supplies can come from Alexandria, I am to have a nice carpet for my room." This room also contained a fireplace and "a good stove chimney." He describes his fellow missionaries as "pleasant and Christian companions" and the Reids as being like "a brother and sister."

He was also pleased with the reception he had received for he writes:

I will now attempt a short account of my reception by the missionaries and the Indians. There was a big meeting appointed for my reception. The three oldest missionaries. . . were all at the meeting to assist in preaching and to join in welcoming. . . . I gave them a short talk telling them why I had come. The meeting continued from 9 to 12 o'clock. Then recess until 2. The people prepared their dinners in their tents, which were scattered through the woods all around the church. Then at 2 o'clock Mr. Hotchkins preached and Mr. Fields (an Indian pastor) interpreted. Then Mr. Kingsbury preached and I followed as soon as he sat down, Mr. Fields interpreting for both of us.

Then Mr. Hotchkins rose and said, "You have been praying the Lord to send you a Pastor. The Lord has sent him (pointing to me) Here he is." Then the church members rose. Turning to me, he said "There are the sheep you have been sent to feed." He then said, "I give you the right hand of fellowship and bid you welcome to labour among these people with us." Then one of the Indian elders addressed me in the name of his brethren bidding me welcome.

The all-day meeting had taken place "inside an arbor" just outside the church. As the crowd left the meeting place, "over 300 in all," each person, "big and little, old and young" passed

¹ The Reids were relatives of Sarah Reid, the wife of Alexander Perry Silliman.

by in single file and extended their hand in greetings, and the young missionary was overjoyed by "the gladness with which they received me. . . my feeling on the occasion can be better imagined than described."

The nature of his work and the size of his parish are best described in his own words:

My field of labour lies within the bounds of 14 miles, so that I can easily ride to any of the places from this centre, my main charge, a church of over 60 members, is only 4 miles distant. I preach there Sabbath mornings between 10 and 12 o'clock. Then ride immediately 6 miles to another station where they hold Sabbath School all day and then I preach again. Then 3 miles farther to another Sabbath School and preach to them. Thence home three miles. This is the present arrangement for three weeks in each month. The 4th Sabbath is given to another church 14 miles distant. I am also to have another Saturday service and another station once in 4 weeks. Thus you see we are busy.

The busy missionary loved his work, but the colds he had complained of while in seminary became more frequent, and in less than two years he unfortunately contracted tuberculosis from overwork and over-exposure. In order to have better care and the rest he needed, he decided to return to the old homestead in Mississippi, but the trip was started too late, and he died, on the way, in Harrison County, Texas, on June 23, 1856. He was buried just across the Texas border in Greenwood, Louisiana. An unknown person wrote on the flyleaf of his Bible, before sending it on to his brother, Albert, that he was buried "in a black suit."

C. Ralph McFadden Silliman

Ralph, the third son of James and Mary McFadden Silliman, was born on December 31, 1829 and was less than three months old at the time of his mother's death and under seven months when his father died. He was raised, as

were his two older brothers, by his aunt, Mary Campbell Silliman, who had become a widow in 1835. Thus he grew up in the old Silliman homestead near Lauderdale, Mississippi.

Like his three first cousins, James M., Calvin U., and William C. Silliman, he studied to be a doctor, but had not completed his course when the Civil War broke out. He enlisted in the Confederate Army and served in the medical corps throughout the war. In a letter which he wrote his cousin, Dr. William C. Silliman, dated September 21, 1864, he told of some of his experiences and of the high casualties in his regiment, even among the medical men. He asked about the situation in Mississippi and expressed the hope that "Mississippi will be held to the last by her gallant troops."

He further stated that his own organization "is on the move and it seems to be toward North Alabama and Mississippi" and that "if we move in that direction, I will be near you soon, in fact you are in the same department that I am." Then he inquired if his cousin was still on hospital duty.

In the same letter he informed his cousin, "I am now acting as apt Surgeon of the 37th, Ala." He added, however, that he would prefer a position as Resident Physician to apt Surgeon. He concluded his letter with the information that he had nearly been captured at Jonesboro in September, having been left with the wounded when "our corps was sent back to Atlanta to assist in the Retreat from that place."¹ It had been impossible to evacuate all the wounded, which resulted in many of them being captured, but he added, "I stayed with our wounded until the enemy's bullets warned me to leave, after consulting the attendant surgeon and having his consent." He signed the letter "your cousin until Death."

After the war Ralph McFadden Silliman moved to Texas, where he continued to live until his death. He is known to have had a son, Ralph.

¹ The evacuation of Atlanta by the Confederate Army began September 2, 1864.

CHAPTER XI

ALEXANDER PERRY AND SARAH REID SILLIMAN

1. A "Consecrated Life"

Alexander, the eldest child of John Jr. and Mary Campbell Silliman, was born in the York District, South Carolina, on June 19, 1818. He was sixteen years old when his parents, with their large family of eight children and three young adopted nephews, left South Carolina in 1834 for a new home in Mississippi. It was a distance of approximately five hundred miles by poor roads and wagon trails. The group, with all their possessions and even a few slaves, made up a small train of wagons pulled by their own horses. The young Alexander, who considered himself quite grown-up at sixteen, helped drive one of the wagons.

Upon their arrival in Mississippi the family settled on a tract of land just across the Alabama border in Kemper County eight miles north of the present village of Lauderdale. Their first task was to clear a small plot and erect a house for the family, a barn for their livestock, and even quarters for their faithful slaves who had accompanied them from South Carolina. The family house, which the young Alexander helped build, was the beginning of the "Old Homestead" where the children would grow up and where Alexander's younger brother, Samuel, who was only four years old in 1834, would live for the next sixty-eight years, or until his death in 1902. It was to this "Old Homestead" that the dying Candour Jefferson Silliman, who served as a Presbyterian missionary to the Choctaw Indians was trying to make his way when he died in 1856. It was from this "Old Homestead" that Alexander Perry had mounted his horse the day he began his journey to Princeton.

Alexander Perry was only seventeen when his father died in 1835. Thus he found himself, at an early age, the man of the

family. He was devoted to his mother and a great source of strength to her. It was also at an early age that he became determined to become a minister, but his education was delayed, and it was not until 1841, after he had completed a preparatory course at Knoxville, that he was able to start his college work at Princeton in preparation for admission to the Princeton Theological Seminary. The College of New Jersey, founded by Presbyterians and chartered in 1746, was moved from Newark to Princeton, N.J. in 1756. Princeton Theological Seminary, which was affiliated with the College of New Jersey, was established in 1812, and by 1840 it had become the foremost training school in the nation for Presbyterian ministers. Princeton was a small town and the College of New Jersey was likewise small when Alexander Perry Silliman arrived there in 1841.

His graduating class four years later, consisted of only 49 seniors. In a printed "circular" dated May 17, 1845 and signed "by order of the Faculty, Geo. Musgrave Giger, Clerk" sent to each member of the graduating class, it was made clear that the Laws of the College required each candidate to "perform such exercises as shall be appointed them, and no candidate shall refuse the exercises assigned him, under penalty of being refused his diploma." Furthermore the students were informed that in order "to preserve all the public exercises from impropriety of any kind, every student previously to his commencement performances. . . shall at least two weeks before the delivery, show to the president the whole of what he proposes to speak."

The candidates were also informed that "a commencement exercise should be of such length as not to occupy more than ten minutes in its delivery." This was a wise precaution since there were twenty-one student speakers on the program in addition to the three main speakers: Mr. Chas. Moreau Davis, who was to deliver a Latin Salutatory; Mr. Thomas Murphy, who was to give the English Salutatory; and Mr. Furman Sheppard, who would deliver the Valedictory oration. The Latin salutatorian outranked the English salutatorian and the valedictorian as well. The final grade average of Mr. Davis was 97.2, Mr.

Murphy's was 96.2, and Mr. Sheppard obtained an average of only 90.3 per cent. Alexander P. Silliman was not one of the 24 class speakers, for his 80.0 grade average gave him only the 27th place in his class standing, out of a total of the 49 seniors. However, considering his lack of formal education before going to college and the poor schools in western South Carolina during his early childhood, he had not done too poorly.

In the fall of 1845, after receiving his A.B. from the College of New Jersey (now Princeton University) he enrolled in the Princeton Theological Seminary and completed his course three years later in 1848. He had studied under some of the foremost Presbyterian scholars and teachers of his day: Samuel Miller, Charles Hodge, Joseph Addison Alexander, and Archibald Alexander. Dr. Archibald Alexander had served at one time as the President of Hampden-Sidney College, and as a Presbyterian pastor in Philadelphia prior to his having been a professor of theology at Princeton.

Shortly after his graduation Alexander Perry Silliman purchased a horse and as many Bibles as the horse could carry, and rode back to Mississippi selling the Bibles along the way to help pay for his night's lodging and for "fodder" for his horse, and it may be surmised that he may have preached a few sermons along the way. He had been licensed to preach by the New Brunswick, New Jersey, Presbytery in 1848 and was ordained by the Tuscaloosa, Alabama Presbytery on April 15, 1850.

On October 20, 1851 Alexander Perry Silliman was married to Sarah Reid of Mobile, Alabama. Sarah was a daughter of Thomas and Sarah Yuille Reid and a granddaughter of John and Margaret Burns Yuille. John Yuille was a direct descendant of Sir Henry Yuille, the English geographer while Margaret Burns was of the same family as the poet Roberts Burns. Margaret Burns was also a direct descendant of Gavin Hamilton, one of the three martyrs beheaded in Scotland during the time of the Reformation, for their determined struggle in the cause of civil and religious liberty. Gavin Hamilton's daughter, Janet, married a Mr. Allston, and their daughter Agnes, married in 1730, William Burns, the father of Margaret Burns.

The first home of Sarah Reid and Alexander Perry Silliman was in Clinton, Alabama, where he served as the pastor of both the Ebenezer and Hebron churches, but lived in Clinton, which became their home for the next seventeen years and was where all their children, except their youngest son James, were born.

Their first child, Mary Ella, was born on February 1, 1854. She was a beautiful child and her mother was extremely proud of her. Sarah even sent her brother, John Reid, who had joined the gold rush to California in 1849, a description of the child and a lock of her hair. Her brother, in a letter dated December 27, 1854 acknowledged her letter containing "the lock of hair of little Mary" but complained that it had cost him two dollars to have it sent on from Shasta but adds, "for a letter from you at any time I would willingly pay double that sum." Then he goes on to say, "I should like very much to see that cherub of yours, with its blue eyes and long dark lashes and brown, wavy hair, but as it is otherwise ordered I hope you will send her daguerreotype so that I can judge of her beauty for myself."¹

Unfortunately the happiness that Sarah and her husband shared in little Mary was to be shattered by the untimely death of their lovely daughter on June 12, 1856. Sarah had written her brother about her loss and John Reid wrote her a lovely letter on August 31, 1856. In an attempt to comfort her he wrote, "Her loss to you must have been severely felt. . . but you a mother, and your first born, it must indeed be a great loss, but with reliance on Him who said 'Suffer little children to come unto me for of such is the Kingdom of Heaven' you have long ere this reaches you, dried your frequent tears and the sorrow at the loss has softened down, knowing that what He does is all for the best though we poor mortals may not always think so."

It must have seemed to Sarah and Alexander that God

¹ The author has in his possession eight letters from John Reid to his sister, Sarah Reid Silliman.

was sorely testing them when tragedy again struck them in 1858 when their one-year-old second born daughter, Annie Katherine, died.

On June 21, 1859 Alexander Perry Silliman received a call from the Ebenezer Presbyterian church in Clinton to be their full-time pastor. The call read as follows:

The Congregation of Ebenezer being on Sufficient grounds well Satisfied of the Ministerial qualifications of you the Reverend A. P. Silliman and having good hopes from our past experience of your labors that your Ministrations in the Gospel will be profitable to our Spiritual interests do earnestly Call and desire you to undertake the Pastoral office in Said Congregation. Promising you in the Discharge of your Duty all proper (sic) support, Encouragement and obedience in the Lord, and that you may be free from worldly cares and Avocations, we hereby promise and oblige ourselves to pay to you through our Deacons the Sum of one thousand dollars per annum in half yearly instalments during the time of your being and continuing the regular pastor of this Church, in testimony whereof we have respectively subscribed our Names this 21st day of June 1859.

He accepted the call and served as the full-time pastor of this church until 1867. Life was not easy in Alabama in the days that followed. The Civil War brought much suffering, but fortunately Clinton was not on the path of General Sherman's march from Atlanta to the sea. Even more difficult were the trying days of Reconstruction and the Carpet-bag rule that followed the war. In 1867 Alexander made plans to move his family to Texas where living conditions were more desirable.

In October 1867 he was given a letter by the officers of the Tuscaloosa Presbytery certifying that he had been a member of that Presbytery for eighteen years and a pastor of one of its largest churches. The letter further reads:

It gives us pleasure to testify to the soundness of his doctrinal views, his uniform zeal, and fidelity in his pastoral labors, and the large success with which his labors have been crowned. And we cordially recommend him to the

confidence and fellowship of his Christian brethren throughout the bounds of our Zion. (The letter bore eight signatures.)

In late 1867 the family moved to Rusk, Cherokee County, Texas, just east of Palestine in Anderson County, where his brother, Dr. James Silliman and his family were living. For the next three years he served as a stated supply pastor of the Rusk and Palestine churches. In 1871 he accepted a call from the Presbyterian Church in Marshall, Texas where he continued to serve as a full-time pastor until 1876. For the next two years he served as an evangelist of the East Texas Presbytery. From 1879 until the time of his death he served as a missionary and Bible agent for the Southern Presbyterian Church.

He was in Charleston, South Carolina, his own native state, campaigning for funds when he suddenly died on January 21, 1890. A death notice in the Charleston News and Courier, dated January 22 states that he had been born in York County, that his grandfather had been a soldier in the Revolution, and that he had been a faithful minister in the Presbyterian Church, his last charge having been in Marshall, Texas, where his wife and family reside. It was further stated that he had been in Charleston "canvassing for several valuable works." His fellow Presbyterian ministers in Charleston arranged for his burial, which was to have been in a lot belonging to the Westminster Presbyterian church in Charleston, but according to this same account, "the family telegraphed at a late hour last night that they would send for the remains to be forwarded to his home in Texas, where the services will be held in his old church." Thus while he died away from home and from those he loved so fondly, his remains were returned to Marshall, Texas, which had been his home for nineteen years. The funeral service was held in his old church and he was followed to his grave in the Greenwood Cemetery "by a company of devoted friends and relatives."

An obituary account stresses his loyalty and devotion to the

church—"He was always a devoted, earnest preacher, greatly loved by many. His whole life had been consecrated to the church and he had inspired others to become ministers."

A noted Presbyterian minister, who was a great admirer of Alexander Perry Silliman, Dr. Henry M. Edmonds, records in his book, *A Pastor's Notebook*, that his own desire to go to Princeton and become a minister was firmly fixed from the day that Samuel Silliman "showed me, as a boy, an outcropping rock back of his house where his brother had stood to mount his horse to ride to Princeton University."

Numerous other tributes were paid to him. A fellow pastor wrote, "I do not hesitate to say that he was one of the most zealous, single hearted, consecrated men to work with I ever knew. He had, to a degree I never saw, exceeded what is usually termed a burning love for souls. His success and his work vindicated the ardor with which he prosecuted it." In an article published in the *Southern Presbyterian Magazine* special tribute is paid to Alexander Perry Silliman for his faithful and untiring pastoral work. He is spoken of as a "man of great simplicity and purity of character," a man "who won all hearts to him in confidence." It is further related that "nothing short of providential hindrance would he suffer to prevent him from filling his appointments, or responding to the call of duty. He seemed to be oblivious to his personal care and comfort. For him to live was Christ." The article ends with this final tribute, "He has left his family a bright example and a glorious record in his consecrated life."

Sarah Reid Silliman continued to live until April 3, 1907, when she died at the home of her daughter, Gertrude Mullings, in Covington, Louisiana at the age of seventy-nine. Memorial services were held in the Presbyterian Church of Covington and also in Marshall, Texas, where she was laid to rest beside her husband. She was survived by five children: John Reid of Saltello, Mexico; William Calvin, San Antonio, Texas; James M. of Fort Worth; Mrs. Sarah Collins, Silao, Mexico; and Mrs. Gertrude Mullings, of Covington, Louisiana.

2. John Reid Silliman

John Reid, the eldest son of the Rev. Alexander P. and Sarah Silliman, was born in the parsonage at Clinton, Alabama, on December 7, 1855. He attended a boy's school in Marshall, Texas and graduated as valedictorian in June 1875. He entered Princeton in the fall of that year and graduated in 1879. Among his classmates were Cleveland H. Dodge, Cyrus H. McCormick, Jr., and his life-long friend, Thomas Woodrow Wilson, who was to become the 27th President of the United States.¹

After his graduation John R. returned to Texas, where he entered the insurance business with his cousin, W. R. Moore in Tyler, Texas. On April 6, 1888 he was married in Overton (Texas) to Mamie P. Boone. They had one son, Charles Perry Silliman, who was born in Tyler, Texas on January 4, 1890. Six months later his wife died. Two years later, on April 27, 1892 he married Katherine Williams.

Because of poor health he had to leave East Texas. He moved first to San Antonio, Texas and in 1897 the family moved to Saltillo, Mexico, just south of Monterrey, in the state of Coahuila. Here he leased a large farm where he established a creamery and produced fruits, vegetables, and alfalfa for a nearby army post. The Silliman home "became noted for its gracious hospitality" in welcoming visiting Americans and relatives. Both husband and wife were deeply religious and interested in mission and school work, particularly in their own state of Coahuila.

Conditions in Mexico were not so pleasant after May 25, 1911 when the long reign of Porfirio Diaz came to an end, initiating an era of revolution. John R. Silliman, because of his knowledge of the country, was urged to accept the position of U.S. Consul. While he continued to live in Saltillo, his principal station or consulate was in San Luis Potasi. Francisco Madero, who had overthrown Diaz in 1911, was himself overthrown and shot in February 1913 by General Victoriano

¹ The Class of 1879 was one of Yale's most famous classes and its 50 year book published in 1931, gives a sketch of John Reid Silliman.

Huerta. The U.S. refused to recognize Huerta which encouraged Venustiano Carranza to head a movement against the General, who was eventually forced out of office in July, 1914.

In the meantime John R. Silliman was caught in the middle of the Huerta-Carranza fight. On a visit to his home in Saltillo he was arrested by the federal soldiers of Gen. Huerta on the charge that he had become an agent of General Carranza and his *constitutionalista* party. He was put in a dungeon and was even told that he was to be executed. For three weeks he was kept in solitary confinement. His life may have been spared through the intercession of the Brazilian minister. In the meantime his wife had fled to the British consulate for safety. Fortunately after three weeks the forces of General Carranza took over the town and the consul was released. He then went to Mexico City unmolested and on to Vera Cruz which had been occupied on April 21, 1914 by U.S. forces.

The story of his arrival in Vera Cruz is told by the war correspondent, Richard Harding Davis, in a news dispatch under date of May 26, 1914:

"For several days we have expected the arrival here from the City of Mexico of Consul John R. Silliman, who was 22 days in a Mexican jail at Saltillo. This morning he walked the three miles of broken track beyond our outposts and into the welcoming lines of our soldiers.

He is tall and dignified in bearing. His black mustache and white hair gave him a strong resemblance to the pictured likeness of Bret Harte. He speaks in a low, cultivated voice and with a Southern accent.

He refused to speak of his experiences in Saltillo and in what obviously is a prepared speech announced that until he has consulted with Consul General Shanklin and Consul Canada, he could say nothing."

A Washington dispatch had previously announced that "after several weeks of effort the State Department has found United States Consul John R. Silliman." It was also added that "the case of Silliman threatened to cause a break in the negotiations for peace now going on at Niagara Falls, Canada."

Soon after his arrival in Vera Cruz he was called to Washington to personally report to the President and the State Department on conditions in Mexico. President Wilson warmly received him and urged him to attend their 35th class reunion at Princeton. They traveled together, and at their class reunion dinner at which ninety-one of their fellow classmates were present, John R. Silliman had the seat of honor next to President Wilson. He was also one of the speakers, and he told of his experiences in Mexico.

John R. Silliman returned to his post in Saltillo in late July, 1914, where order had been partly restored and where he continued to serve as a special agent of his government. In 1915 he was called to the United States as a special State Department adviser during the final Niagara Falls Conferences which were to arrange for the retirement of the dictator, Huerta. After General Carranza was recognized as *de facto* President by the United States on October 19, 1915, John R. Silliman traveled extensively with him, exercising virtually the powers of an ambassador. Later he was transferred to Guadalajara, which was then considered one of the most important consular posts in Mexico.

After the United States entered World War I in 1917, he again became President Wilson's personal representative with the special responsibility of watching German activities. He died in Guadalajara on January 17, 1919 after an attack of influenza and pneumonia. He was survived by his only son, Charles Perry Silliman, and by a grandson, John Charles Silliman, who was born on April 23, 1916.

3. Sarah Frances Silliman

Sarah Frances, daughter of Alexander P. and Sarah Reid Silliman, was born in Clinton, Alabama, on January 15, 1861. She was only seven years old when her family moved to Marshall, Texas. On March 17, 1886 she was married to Thomas Benton Collins, a very successful railroad man holding important positions in Texas, Kansas, and in Mexico. While

serving as the Superintendent of the Mexican Division of the Mexican Central Railroad, he died suddenly on October 6, 1906. His body was returned in a private railroad car to Marshall, Texas for burial. He was survived by his wife and three sons.

After the death of her husband, confronted with the rearing and education of her three sons, Sarah Frances accepted a position as house mother at Austin College in Sherman, Texas. Later she assumed the same duties with the addition of dining-room supervisor at Baylor University, Waco, Texas, where her sons received their education. She died in Abilene, Texas, on September 11, 1938. She was brought to Marshall, Texas for burial in the Silliman plot beside her husband.

Their son, Benton Silliman Collins, was born in San Antonio, Texas, on September 11, 1892 and died in 1953. He was married in Waco, Texas, to Amelia Smith, on September 26, 1916. They had a family of six children. Their oldest son, Benton Silliman Collins, Jr., was a Captain in the Engineering Corps during World War II.

Francis Ernest Collins, the second son, was born in Alexandria, Louisiana, on January 10, 1897, served overseas in World War I and was married in Dallas, Texas, on February 4, 1928 to Elizabeth Ragsdale. They had one child. Francis E. Collins died in Waco, Texas in December, 1934.

John Richard Collins, the youngest son, also served in World War I. He was born in Hallsville, Texas on September 11, 1899. On November 24, 1927, he was married to Clarita Lobo of New York City, the ceremony being performed by the Pastor of the Fifth Avenue Presbyterian Church. He was connected with Electric Bond and Share Company of New York, and as their representative he traveled extensively in South America and Europe, Paris being his headquarters for a number of years.

4. Gertrude Silliman

Gertrude, second daughter of Alexander Perry and Sarah Reid Silliman, was born in Marshall, Texas on March 22, 1863. She was married on April 10, 1884 to Charles Kerrison Mullings, an efficient railroad executive. He was the auditor and later the treasurer of the East Louisiana Railway which became the New Orleans Great Northern Railroad Company. A deeply religious man, he served both as a Sunday School teacher and an elder in the Presbyterian Church, both in Covington and in Bogalusa, La. where he died on October 18, 1912. An account written at the time of his death speaks of him as "a railroad man of unusual fidelity and marked success." The article ends with this final tribute: "He was a faithful friend, a devoted father and husband, a consecrated ruling elder, untiring and unselfish in every good word and work. His was a life that had the stamp of faithfulness, whether in the home or at the office, on the street, or in the house of God."

After her husband's death, Gertrude built a new house in Bogalusa in which she lived until her death on June 17, 1935. Three of her children continued to live with her. In an article published in the *Christian Observer* shortly after her death, the writer states that he had never seen greater devotion than that which existed between this mother and her children. The church to which she was devoted was a part of her life, and she was always an inspiration to her pastor. In another account of her death published in the *Bogalusa Enterprise* it is stated that she was "one of Bogalusa's most prominent and beloved church and club workers." She was a charter member of the Bogalusa Presbyterian Church, as well as a charter member of the Ingleside Literary Society and of the Bogalusa Chapter of Delphians, having served as president of both organizations for several terms. It is further stated that she was a talented speaker "and had an especially charming and gracious personality." She was buried beside her husband and her oldest daughter Margaret in Covington, La. where she had lived from 1899 until 1908.

Eight children were born to Charles and Gertrude Silliman Mullings:

- A. Margaret, born in Marshall, Texas on February 28, 1886; died in Covington, La., October 18, 1903
- B. Gertrude, born in Marshall, Texas on September 5, 1888
- C. John Silliman Mullings, born in Marshall, June 6, 1891
- D. Sarah Yuille, born in New Orleans, October 15, 1893
- E. Charles Kerrison, Jr., born in New Orleans, October 4, 1895; died in Bogalusa, La., December 24, 1953
- F. Dorothy, born in Big Springs, Texas, June 3, 1898
- G. Mary, born in Covington, La., October 7, 1900
- H. Elizabeth McDowell, born in Covington, March 31, 1902

(A) Margaret Mullings was only seventeen at the time of her death. Shortly before her death she and her sister Gertrude spent one year at Silliman College in Clinton, La.¹

(B) Gertrude Mullings graduated from the Louisiana State Normal College and in 1940 received an A.B. degree from the Louisiana State University. In 1955 she was retired after 45 years with the City School System of Bogalusa, having been a teacher there since 1910 and having served as Principal of Superior Avenue School for 32 years. On the occasion of her retirement a gala reception was held in her honor, sponsored by the school faculty, former students, parents, and friends. Like her mother, Gertrude was always active in church work. She was a Primary Superintendent of the Sunday School of her church for a number of years, later taught the Women's Bible Class, and was a lesson leader of her Church Circle. She was a past secretary and past Worthy Matron of the Order of the Eastern Star, a past president of the Bogalusa Delphian Society and officer of the Ingleside Literary Society.

¹ Silliman College was founded as a Southern Presbyterian girls' school in 1852 by William C. Silliman, a great-grandson of Rev. Robert Silliman of New Canaan, Conn. The father of William C. Silliman, Capt. Thomas, had moved from Conn. to East Feliciana Parish, La. in 1832.

(C) John Silliman Mullings graduated from Dixon Academy in Covington, La. and in 1910 from Washington and Lee University as an engineer. He married Velma Magee of Franklinton, La. on June 1, 1921. He has spent most of his life as a contractor, building roads and bridges, homes, churches, hospitals, post offices, and other public buildings. During World War II he operated a defense plant producing materials for the government, at Columbia, Mississippi. Both he and his wife have always been active in church and civic organizations. He is also a past president of the Columbia, Miss. Rotary Club. He and his wife continue to live in semi-retirement in Columbia, Mississippi. They have no children. He is now the office manager of the firm Carter and Mullings, Inc. General Contractors.

(D) Sarah Mullings graduated from the Bogalusa High School, took a business course, and did some office work. She was very helpful in the home with her mother, Gertrude Silliman Mullings, and since her mother's death she has continued her helpfulness in the household. For many years she has been active in Sunday School and church organizations, and is a member of the Bogalusa Delphian Society.

(E) Charles Kerrison Mullings, Jr. attended the Bogalusa High School, and after his father's death in 1912 he began working for the New Orleans Great Northern Railroad Company. A volunteer in World War I he was in the famous Rainbow Division under General Douglas MacArthur. He was gassed and wounded in the battle of the Argonne Woods. After the war he married Gertrude M. Harms in Bogalusa, La. on January 27, 1922. He died on December 24, 1953 in Bogalusa, La. He was survived by his wife and two sons: Charles Kerrison Mullings III, born in Bogalusa on July 10, 1927; and Robert Edward Mullings, born in Bogalusa on June 20, 1936.

Charles Kerrison Mullings III after graduating from the Bogalusa High School took special courses while in the service

of the U.S. Army. Returning to Bogalusa he married Mary Schumacher. They presently reside in Bogalusa where he is employed by the City and where Mary is a teacher in Annunciation School. They have three sons:

Charles Kerrison Mullings IV, born March 21, 1949;
Joseph Patrick Mullings, born September 7, 1950; and
John Silliman Mullings, born August 19, 1952.

Robert Edward Mullings, son of Charles K. Mullings Jr., graduated from the Bogalusa High School and from Southeastern Louisiana College after which he accepted a position with the local YMCA. On September 10, 1961 he married Claudette Price also of Bogalusa. Some time after his marriage, he accepted a position with the YMCA in Lynchburg, Virginia. While there he continued his college education as preparation to qualify for a YMCA Secretary. In the summer of 1965 the family moved to Chattanooga, Tenn., where he is engaged in YMCA work. He and his wife have two daughters:

Cheryl Ann, born in Lynchburg, Va., November 24, 1962;
and Judy Lynn born in Lynchburg, Va., September 18, 1963

(F) Dorothy Mullings graduated from the Bogalusa High School, attended school in Richmond, Va., and also Soule' Business College in New Orleans. She was married on November 10, 1928 to Morgan Parnell of Columbia, Miss.

Morgan Parnell had served overseas in World War I for a long period of time. Both he and his wife worked in the auditing department of the New Orleans Great Northern Railroad. Later she was transferred to the Superintendent's office. They lived for some time in Mobile, Alabama after the merger of the NOGN Railroad with the GM&O. In 1932 they returned to Bogalusa.

Morgan died in the Veterans Hospital in Jackson, Miss., on March 7, 1948. Dorothy is now a retired railroad employee but is presently employed at the local YWCA with the Camp Fire Girls organization. She has done considerable youth work and

has always been interested in the work of the church (Presbyterian U.S.). She has taught youth and adult classes in Sunday School and has taken an active part in the Women of the Church Organization. In the Order of Eastern Star she has served as secretary and filled various other offices.

The Parnells had one daughter, Annie Kate born in Bogalusa September 14, 1933. She attended school in Bogalusa and graduated from Bogalusa High School and attended Belhaven College at Jackson, Miss. for a year, then transferred to Southeastern Louisiana College, Hammond, La. While there she met William Robert Graves of Hammond and Ponchatoula, who graduated in June 1953 with high honors and received the Rotary Fellowship Award for good citizenship. They were married in July of 1953. He went soon thereafter to the Navy Officers Candidate School in Newport, Rhode Island, and his wife moved there at the end of the summer term at Southeastern. He graduated from this School on November 13, 1953 and was stationed in Norfolk, Va.

Later he was commissioned as Lt., junior grade, and sent overseas. After his release from the Navy in October 1956 he took graduate work at Purdue University where he received a Master's Degree. After his graduation he accepted employment with the International Business Machines Corp. and was located in New Orleans. After several years he was transferred to Huntsville, Ala. while the family lived in Decatur. In the fall of 1964 he was given a new assignment in Yorktown Heights, N.Y. where his family joined him in January, 1965. They have two children:

Paul Gordon Graves, born in Portsmouth, Va. on
December 16, 1955; and

Ellen Elizabeth, born in Metairie, New Orleans on
December 10, 1959

(G) Mary Mullings also graduated from the Bogalusa High School and then worked for the First State Bank and Trust Company there. On August 9, 1923 she married the

cashier of this bank, Elbert Edmund Moore. In 1936 the Moores moved to Baton Rouge where Elbert had accepted a position in the Louisiana National Bank of that city. Later he became the president of this bank. Elbert Edmund Moore died very suddenly while traveling on board an airplane, between Detroit and Minneapolis on November 16, 1962. He had gone to Detroit on banking business. He was buried in Baton Rouge. Mary and Elbert had two sons: Elbert Edmund Moore, Jr., born in Bogalusa on February 9, 1925; and Calvin Silliman Moore, born in Baton Rouge on September 20, 1938.

Elbert Edmund Moore, Jr. and Calvin Silliman Moore both hold responsible positions with Ethyl Corporation. Elbert received his high school education in Baton Rouge, then attended Louisiana State University. While in the Navy he took training at Midshipmen's School, Columbia University and at Harvard, was commissioned an Ensign and served overseas. After the war he graduated from Georgia Tech, then continued his studies at LSU, and received a Law degree from the University of Houston, also from Loyola University Law School in New Orleans. He is at present a Director of International Projects for Ethyl Corporation, and much of his work has been overseas.

Calvin Silliman Moore received his education in Baton Rouge, Georgia Tech and Louisiana State University. He was married June 23, 1962 to Patricia Thomas of Baton Rouge and New Orleans. They now reside at Birmingham, Michigan, near Detroit. They have one son, Michael Calvin Moore, born August 31, 1965.

(H) Elizabeth McDowell Mullings graduated from the Bogalusa High School and also from Soule' Business College. On December 25, 1922 she married Reuben Maine of New York state. Her husband, a graduate of Syracuse University, in 1933 became the assistant general manager of the American Creosoting Company. They had two children: Elizabeth Mullings Maine, born on November 25, 1923 in Brunswick, Ga., and Reuben Edwin Maine, born in Bogalusa on January 6, 1929.

The family lived for over eight years in Bogalusa and then moved in 1933 to Hattiesburg, Miss. In July 1944 after the promotion of Reuben Maine to the vice-presidency of his company, the family moved to Louisville, Ky. Reuben Maine and Elizabeth Mullings Maine presently reside near Somerset, Kentucky where they have a beautiful home in the Kentucky hills. They enjoy gardening, fishing, and boating. Reuben has continued in the treated lumber business and is presently semi-retired.

Their daughter Elizabeth Maine graduated from high school in Hattiesburg, Miss., and from Belhaven College, Jackson, Miss. Having majored in music she received a scholarship to the Chicago Musical College from which she received her Master's degree in piano. She has been a school teacher and is a talented musician in vocal as well as instrumental music. She has taken a great interest in choral and choir singing. For several years she was a director of the Recreational Program for the Air Force overseas. Presently she is on the staff of the YWCA in Louisville, Kentucky.

Reuben Edwin Maine, son of Elizabeth Mullings Maine and Reuben B. Maine, graduated from high school in Louisville, Ky., after having received his earlier education in Hattiesburg, Miss. He attended the University of Kentucky, also the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, majoring in Electrical Engineering, and received a B.S. degree. He was married to Nancy Boston of Louisville on December 28, 1950. They are presently located in Charlottesville, Va., where he is co-owner and Executive Vice President of Electronics Concepts, Inc. The Maines have four children: Richard, born October 20, 1951; John Daniel, born March 18, 1955; Susan Nancy, born July 30, 1957; and Robert Paul, born March 30, 1963.

5. James Milton Silliman

James Milton, the youngest son of the Rev. Alexander P. and Sarah Reid Silliman, was born in Marshall, Texas on March 8, 1874.

He was married on June 6, 1906 to Clara McMackin in El Paso, Texas. Their first home was in Forth Worth, Texas. However, most of their married life was spent in Denver, Colorado where James served for many years as the Baggage and Electrical Agent for the Union Pacific Railway. James and his wife were devout members of the Central Presbyterian Church in Denver and their dearest friends were the pastor of this church and his co-workers. Both husband and wife held various offices in this church.

James Milton died suddenly on October 18, 1929. He is buried in the beautiful Crown Hill Cemetery in Denver. His wife continued to live in Denver for a time but later moved to Los Angeles where she lived until her death during the latter part of 1953.

CHAPTER XII

WILLIAM CALVIN SILLIMAN

1. William Calvin Silliman

William Calvin, son of the Rev. Alexander Perry and Sarah Reid Silliman, was born in Clinton, Alabama on December 10, 1865. When he was only three years old, his parents moved to Texas. The education he received was obtained primarily from his own father who conducted a school for the children of his church members. He worked for a time on a cattle ranch and was later employed by the San Antonio and Arkansas Pass Railroad. On October 22, 1891 he was married in Luling, Texas to Onie Foster.

Onie Laura Foster Silliman was born in Beeville, Texas on October 25, 1866. She came from a well-to-do and influential San Antonio family. Her father, Marion Foster, was an officer in the Mexican War and a Captain in the Confederate Army during the Civil War. Refusing to surrender at the end of the war, he fled to Mexico where he became a Colonel in the Mexican army under the Emperor Maximilian. The United States refused to recognize the Emperor and his French-supported government and gave support to General Benito Juarez. When the Emperor was forced to capitulate on May 14, 1867 and was executed on June 19, General Juarez again became President of Mexico, a position he had been forced to give up when French troops occupied Mexico on June 7, 1863. Not liking the turn of events, Col. Marion Foster decided to return to Texas.

After the marriage of William Calvin and Onie Foster, the husband went into business for himself in the grain and fuel business, then in the feed and coal business in San Antonio. He obtained the exclusive agencies for the retail output of several

coal mines. Later he financed the development of some coal land in Bastrop County, Texas, and formed a mining company known as the Calvin Coal Company. This company was exceedingly prosperous, and William Calvin himself became widely known throughout the state as a successful manager and businessman. In 1906 he was instrumental in organizing the first Rotary Club in San Antonio. During World War I he was appointed by President Wilson as the Food Administrator for the State of Texas at a salary of one dollar a year.

Like his father he was deeply religious and was an active layman in the Presbyterian Church.

In 1918 he moved his family from San Antonio, Texas to Los Angeles, California. However, he continued his various business interests in or near San Antonio and continued to serve as the President of the Calvin Coal Company. On a visit to San Antonio in 1927, he died suddenly on March 9 from a heart attack. His remains were returned to California, where he was buried in the Los Angeles, Hollywood Cemetery, by the side of his daughter, Sarah Lorine, who had been born in San Antonio on December 10, 1902 and had died in California on April 6, 1920. She had been a student at Mills College.

In 1953 Mrs. Onie Laura Silliman established the "Will C. Silliman Memorial" in memory of her husband.¹ It was founded by an irrevocable trust. The Articles of Incorporation show that it is a non-profit corporation, set up under the laws of the State of California. The primary business of the Corporation was to acquire property and construct a hospital institution for the reception, care, and treatment of elderly persons.

The Corporation is also authorized to receive grants and bequests. Furthermore, it can also perform and enter into contracts of any kind or nature with any firm or association or corporation in the furtherance of the objects of the Corporation. No part of the net earnings of the Corporation "shall inure to

¹ William Calvin Silliman was widely known as Will C. Silliman, and he himself preferred the name Will to William.

the benefit of any private shareholder or individual." In case of liquidation, the property of the Corporation must be transferred to such other non-profit charitable corporation or fund or foundation organized and operated exclusively for religious, charitable, scientific, literary, or educational purposes.

Onie Laura Silliman continued to live in California until her death on October 2, 1960. She is buried beside her husband and daughter in the Hollywood Cemetery in Los Angeles.

2. William Calvin Silliman, Jr.

William Calvin Jr., the only son of William Calvin and Onie Foster Silliman, was born in San Antonio, Texas on July 17, 1893. He graduated from the West Texas Military Academy at San Antonio in June 1913. The school was rated at that time as a Class "A" military academy by the United States War Department. Recommended graduates, upon application to the Bureau of Insular affairs, were eligible for appointment as Third Lieutenants in the Philippine Constabulary.

The saga of the Philippine Constabulary and its "corps d'elite" and the part it played in the early days of the American regime is a fascinating story. The Corps came into official being on August 8, 1901 (the same month and year that Silliman Institute was founded in the province of Negros Oriental) when the U.S. Congress authorized the appointment of U.S. army officers to be Chief and Assistant Chiefs of Constabulary with the rank of Brigadier-General and Colonels respectively.

Brigadier-General Henry T. Allen, a career U.S. Army cavalry officer, was designated as the first Chief of Constabulary, and he proceeded with the organization of a military force of approximately 250 American officers and 5,000 carefully-selected and picked soldiers. By 1903 the main sources of officer personnel, who were credited with the same extent of service and privilege as under a regular army commission, were supplied by military school and college graduates from

the United States whose curricula warranted a Class "A" rating by the War Department. The largest number were to serve in Mindanao or the southern Philippines. There were more top officers in World War I who had seen action in Mindanao than from any other section of the U.S. or its possessions including the Commander-in-Chief, John J. Pershing, who had served with Gen. Leonard Wood in Mindanao. The Philippines especially appealed to the young William Calvin Silliman, but it would be another two years after his graduation before he could be sent there.

Immediately following his graduation in June 1913 he enlisted in the 2nd Infantry, Texas National Guard and was on full-time active duty at Camp Mabry, and at Texas City, Texas, and at several stations on the Mexican border at the time of the border clashes.

During his National Guard service he served in various non-commissioned officer grades, from private to regimental sergeant-major. He was commissioned First Lieutenant, 2nd Infantry, Texas National Guard on February 15, 1915 and was detailed as recruiting officer at San Antonio, Texas, on September 10, 1915. He was honorably discharged to accept an appointment as Third Lieutenant, Philippine Constabulary.

After a brief indoctrination course at San Lucia Barracks in the Philippines, he was commissioned January 14, 1916, as Third Lieutenant and was assigned to the 7th Sulu Company at Camp Romandier, Sulu. During this service he engaged in several campaigns against outlaws, notably Lakian Cotta, near Bud Lumbao, Sulu. For his participation in this affair, he was Honorably Mentioned in Orders, and received the following Letter of Commendation from Colonel Peter E. Traub, United States Army, commanding the Department of Mindanao and Sulu, dated at Zamboanga, Mindanao, May 24, 1916:

I take pleasure in commending you for your conduct and that of your detachment, Seventh Sulu Company, in the affair at Lakian's Cotta, near Bud Lumbao, Sulu, on May 13, 1916, in which five outlaws were killed. You have learned early the proper military method of gaining in-

formation by patrols and then attacking without delay, and I congratulate you on the success attending your efforts, not because you killed a few misguided followers, but because your engagement effectively induced Lakian later on to surrender with his followers to the senior inspector of Sulu, thus ridding Sulu again of its last outlaw band.

Copy of this letter will be placed on file with your efficiency report at these headquarters.

The "Monograph" maintained at the headquarters of the Philippine Constabulary at Jolo, Sulu, indicates that in the Department's semi-annual pistol and rifle firing competition for the period ending June 30, 1916, Lieutenant Silliman stood eighth on the list of all officers competing. The aggregate was 189 "bulls' eyes" out of a possible 200, or a percentage of 94.5, slow fire, rapid fire, and moving targets.

Again on April 24, 1917, Lieutenant Silliman was prominently mentioned in the Philippine Constabulary "Monograph" at the Sulu Headquarters. This concerned Tandubas Island, about 40 miles north of the coast of Borneo, which was infested with pirates and served as the headquarters for frequent raiding sorties against villages on the coast of North Borneo, as well as other small settlements throughout the Malayan Archipelago. Little towns were often pillaged and burned, all the men killed, their women and children carried off into slavery by these pirates. Lieutenant Silliman, in command of a detachment of the 5th Sulu Company from Bongao, Tawi-Tawi, was ordered to land on the island and search for forbidden arms and other contraband. He and his detachment of soldiers traveled in a "Lipa" (a small outrigger native sailboat, equipped with long five-foot paddles made of ebony, a very hard wood, used without rowlocks to propel the boat when sails were not in use).

On landing at Tandubas, Lieutenant Silliman's party was met by a group of armed inhabitants, who disputed his authority to search the island. When disembarking from the "Lipa," Lieutenant Silliman carried a bugsai (the name for paddle in the Sulu dialect). He ordered his men to cover him with their

rifles, but to fire only if he so commanded. As his patrol was outnumbered more than ten to one, he hoped to accomplish his mission by diplomacy, if possible. In the armed band, there was one who was more zealous than the rest, by the name of Amang. He charged and attacked Lieutenant Silliman with a drawn "barong" (a well-balanced and tempered cutlass about three and one-half feet long). The Lieutenant parried the attack with the hard wood paddle, which dislodged the "barong" from the attacker's hand, but not before a three-inch gash had been inflicted across the top of his head (he later was awarded the Philippine Purple Heart for this wound). Although bleeding profusely from the head wound, the Lieutenant swung the paddle, with its knife-like edge, and connected with the head of his attacker with such force that the man's cranium was split wide open. The tragic and violent death of Amang had a very sobering influence on his armed companions who, on Lieutenant Silliman's orders, laid down their arms and surrendered. After securing over fifty prisoners, the patrol proceeded to search the entire island, with the result that a quantity of firearms, dynamite and other contraband was confiscated.

For twenty long months eight Constabulary companies had been on continuous field service throughout the Sulu Archipelago; day patrols, night patrols—hike, hike, hike—regardless of weather conditions. A patrol by native boat to the smaller islands was considered a real break. The Tandubas Island affair was just a minor incident in the long campaign to rid Sulu of its outlaws and pirates.

Coming events were casting their dark shadows on the Corps; the regular Army was quietly preparing for World War I by calling numbers of Constabulary officers back to the United States; and for many of those on duty in Sulu, including Lieutenant Silliman, this was their last field service in the Philippines. Silliman was promoted to Second Lieutenant in March, 1917, and shortly thereafter he was transferred to the Manila area.

In February, 1918, he was returned to the United States

for aviation training in the Aviation Section of the U.S. Army Signal Corps. During this training he was hospitalized and became physically disqualified for further duty with that section; and on June 27, 1918, he was commissioned First Lieutenant of Cavalry, United States National Guard of Texas. On July 20, 1918, he was promoted to Captain, while on duty at the Cavalry Officer's Training School at Camp Stanley, Texas. Completing the training course on December 8, 1918, he was awarded a certificate of eligibility to hold his commission as Captain of Cavalry; and he was honorably discharged on June 10, 1920.

The records of the Adjutant General's office of the U.S. Army show that Captain Silliman, 0-167-184, was appointed Captain, Military Corps Reserve, on April 12, 1922. He continued to serve in an inactive duty status in the U.S. Army Reserve until 1941. During the period, he had training duty in the office of the Provost Marshal at Quarry Heights CZ Panama, as well as at Fort MacArthur, California and in the office of the Executive Officer, Southern California Military District.

When the California National Guard was called into Federal service in 1941, he was placed upon State full-time active military duty and was assigned to the Adjutant General's Department as Executive Officer, Adjutant General's Office, Sacramento, California. From his permanent rank of Captain, Inactive, Army of the United States, he was given two temporary promotions—Major and Lieutenant Colonel. During World War II he also served as assistant to the Executive Officer at the Headquarters of Southern California Military District, U.S. Army, Los Angeles, California, and as assistant to the Director of Internal Security, U.S. Army Air Force Depot, Provost Marshal's Office, Maywood, California. Because of disabilities incurred as a result of World War I military service, he was relieved from that assignment, and subsequently, pursuant to War Department General Orders No. 11, dated February 23, 1945, he was placed on the United States Army Honorary Officers Retired List. He is also a member (honorary) of the Reserve Officers Legion of the Philippines

(Philippine Armed Forces) with the rank of Lieutenant Colonel, Philippine Constabulary, Retired.

In 1949 Col. Silliman helped organize the Philippine Constabulary Officers Association, becoming its first Vice President on February 21, 1949, and after the death of the President, Colonel Ole C. Waloe, Col. Silliman succeeded him as President, the position he holds up to the present time. The purpose of the organization has been to enable both the American and Filipino officers to keep in touch with each other through the publication of bulletins and to preserve and publish historical records pertaining to this unique military corps and the part it played in the bringing of law and order to the Philippines in the turbulent period following the Spanish-American war.

On September 12, 1920 Col. Silliman married Marion Wilde Hutchins Robertson. On their honeymoon they spent nearly nine months in traveling all over Europe, North Africa, the Near East, and in Central and South America. Like him his wife also loved to travel and in order to see the United States, Canada, and Mexico more extensively Col. Silliman purchased a Ford bus, 32 feet long and eight feet wide; then he installed in it all the comforts of a home. He equipped it with a butane stove and a twenty-gallon hot water heater, an electric refrigeration unit with its own automatic generator, also a garbage disposal and an air-conditioning unit. Both hot and cold water was available at all times for the shower and toilet. The bus, which he named prior to John Steinbeck's book, "The Wayward Bus," was also equipped with air brakes and air pressure for the water system. Twin beds and a large double bed were other unique features. The kitchen was designed so that meals could be prepared while the bus was in motion. Another extraordinary feature was a special engine, attached to the rear of the bus, with a mechanism which would throw the engine into gear and start its motor to give additional pushing power to the bus when needed on steep grades. This mobile home traveled nearly 150,000 miles during the years of the Silliman ownership.

Mexico City, Key West, Florida, and Quebec, Canada were among the distant places visited by the "Wayward Bus" plus several transcontinental trips.

Another hobby of Col. Silliman, besides that of traveling to far-away places all over the world, has been aviation. An early aviation enthusiast since his World War I flying experiences, he financed after the war one of the first low-wing, high payload experimental monoplanes with a view of its use in cargo and air mail service. Unfortunately, the plane designer and Colonel Silliman were involved in separate air crashes. The plane designer was killed, and the Colonel was hospitalized for some time. However, his interest in aviation continued, and for many years he owned and flew his own plane.

He has continued to serve, since its incorporation, as the President and General Manager of the Will C. Silliman Memorial Foundation. His business interests have included the purchase and selling of California real estate. He is a member of various clubs and lodges including the American Legion, Aviators Post No. 350, the Disabled Officers Association, an honorary life member of the Elks Lodge, the Norton Air Force Base Officers Club, Lodge 711 of the Free and Accepted Masons of California, the San Bernardino Rotary Club, and the Philippine Constabulary Officers Association.

Colonel Silliman has always had a warm spot in his heart for the Philippines and especially for the Philippine Constabulary. In 1960 he set up a permanent endowed trust fund to be administered by the United Presbyterian Commission on Ecumenical Mission and Relations in New York City, the income of which is to provide each year two or more full scholarships at Silliman University for students from the Province of Sulu, who plan upon graduation, to serve in the Philippine Constabulary.

In July, 1961 Colonel Silliman returned to the Philippines on what he called a sentimental journey. He was met at the Manila airport by high-ranking Constabulary officers and was assigned a military aide for the duration of his stay in the

Islands. At Silliman University an R.O.T.C. military parade and review was held in his honor, and two of the ranking student officers from the southern Philippines were his own William Calvin Silliman Constabulary Scholarship awardees.

From Dumaguete he proceeded to Zamboanga City, where he had once served for a short time as the Commanding Officer of the Zamboanga Barracks. There a dinner was held in his honor at the leading hotel in the city with high officials and local Constabulary officers present.

In the City of Jolo, Sulu Province, a large delegation met him at the airport, and among the crowd were several soldiers who had served with him, some of whom had brought their sons to meet him. A few had come as far as Siasi, and one old retired sergeant, who had served under him, came from Bongao, Tawi-Tawi. He had brought his son with him that he might see the head scar the Colonel had received as a souvenir in the Tandubas fight.¹

Upon his return to Manila Colonel Silliman was given, at a special ceremony at Camp Crame, a Plaque of Appreciation and also the Philippine Legion of Honor medal was conferred upon him by Brigadier-General Isagani V. Campo, the Commanding Officer of the Philippine Constabulary. The citation he received read in part:

As a newly commissioned lieutenant in the Constabulary and assigned as the Commanding Officer of the 6th Sulu Company, Lt. Silliman worked indefatigably to extend America's policy of friendship to the Filipino people. Where peaceful persuasion failed, he implemented a concerted offensive against outlaws and bandits. He figured particularly in the fight against and capture of outlaw leader Lakian as well as his armed followers. . . .

An account of this presentation in a leading Manila paper included the following paragraph:

¹ The author accompanied Colonel Silliman on his Southern Island visit, and was also present in Manila when the Colonel was presented the Legion of Honor award at Camp Crame.

Yesterday, a grateful nation bestowed upon an American oldtimer, although belatedly, one of the country's most coveted medals. The Philippine Legion of Honor, the highest military medal that can be awarded to foreigners, was presented to Lt. Col. William C. Silliman (retired) in recognition of his sacrifices and services to the Filipino people.

Col. Silliman continues to live in San Bernardino, California. His wife, Marion Wilde Silliman, who was born in 1898, died on June 23, 1958. Their only daughter, Dicta Marion Silliman Faber, was born in Los Angeles on August 6, 1929 and was educated in the California State College at Los Angeles, and has earned graduate credits toward a doctor's degree. She is presently serving as a teacher in the San Bernardino City Secondary School system. Like her father she has travelled extensively.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

The financing of the research which this book involved and the major cost of seeing it through the Press was, in a large part, made possible by a grant from the Will C. Silliman Memorial (Incorporated) and by the personal generosity of Col. William Calvin Silliman, himself. I am also indebted to him for the collection of priceless old letters and records he has given me, especially those concerning his uncle, Consul John Reid Silliman, and his grandfather, the Rev. Alexander Perry Silliman.

The first section of Chapter I could not have been written without the help of the Ulster-Scot Historical Society of Belfast, Northern Ireland. I am especially indebted to the secretary of this Society, Miss I. Embleton, not only for the original records, but also for her gracious reading of the final proof of the section and in personally rechecking each record and the exact spelling of the Silliman name wherever it appears.

Chapter IV is based largely on the records and facts assembled by Mrs. Frances Kaercher Keiser over a period of fifty years. Mrs. Keiser was of further help in the proofreading of both the first and final drafts of this chapter dealing with her great-grandfather Thomas and his three equally interesting Pottsville brothers.

I am also profoundly grateful to Mrs. Sylvia Ellen Walker Caven, who generously shared her voluminous notes, letters and charts collected over a period of forty years. This collection provided the foundation for Chapters VI through VIII.

Chapters X and XI are largely based on the unpublished Mullings Manuscript, a collection of family records compiled in 1933 by Gertrude Silliman Mullings just two years before her death. Mrs. Mullings was a daughter of the Rev. Alexander Perry Silliman.

This book could never have been written without the help of many other persons, too numerous to mention, who have copied tombstone inscriptions or have shared with me copies of Bible records, choice clippings from old scrapbooks and similar records.

I am deeply grateful for the help given by the following libraries or their staff members: Mrs. Jane Moyer of the Easton, Pennsylvania, Public Library; Mrs. Catherine T. Shulenberger of the James V. Brown Library of Williamsport, Pa.; Mrs. Marion B. Kelly of the Erie Public Library; Mrs. Marian Gilbert of the Three Rivers Public Library, Three Rivers, Michigan; the New York Public Library; the Los Angeles Public Library; and the Newberry Library in Chicago.

Invaluable help was also given by Mr. Charles F. Snyder, secretary of the Northumberland County Historical Society and by Atty. F. Porter Wagner of the Montour County Historical Society, whose own ancestor is buried in the Derry Church Cemetery in Montour County, Pa.

I wish to take this occasion to acknowledge and thank my secretaries, Mrs. Clarissa A. Flores and Mrs. Dolores V. Tabasuares, for their immeasurable assistance over the past five years in making charts, in copying notes, typing and retyping the various drafts of the manuscript, and for their willingness to work far beyond the call of duty even after office hours without complaint.

I also owe a special debt of gratitude to my wife, Metta Armstrong Jacobs Silliman (whose own ancestor, Thomas Armstrong, was one of the earliest Forks of the Delaware settlers) for her encouragement, helpful criticism and for the endless hours she has spent in the proofreading of this book.

R.B.S.